

## The Salaah of Hadhrat Abdullaah bin Unays ﷺ in the Path of Allaah

Hadhrt Abdullaah bin Unays ﷺ narrates that Rasulullaah ﷺ once called him and said, "I have intelligence that Khaalid bin Sufyaan bin Nubay of the Banu Hudhayl tribe had mustered up a force to attack me. He is now at Urna. Go there and kill him." Hadhrt Abdullaah bin Unays ﷺ asked, "O Rasulullaah ﷺ! Describe him to me so that I may recognise him." Rasulullaah ﷺ said, "When you see him, you will find him shivering." Hadhrt Abdullaah bin Unays ﷺ relates further that he then left with his sword hanging around his neck and proceeded until he found him at Urna with his wives. The time for Asr had already arrived and Khaalid was looking for a place to settle his wives.

Hadhrt Abdullaah bin Unays ﷺ says, "When I saw him, I recognised the shivering that Rasulullaah ﷺ described and I advanced towards him. Fearing that nothing should prove an obstacle to prevent me from my salaah as I attempted to kill him, I performed my salaah as I walked towards him. I performed Ruku and Sajdah by making gestures with my head. When I reached him, he asked, 'Who is this man?' I replied, 'I am an Arab who has heard about you and about your mustering forces against that person (Rasulullaah ﷺ). I have come to you in this regard.'" He said, 'Yes, I am busy with that.'"

Continuing further, Hadhrt Abdullaah bin Unays ﷺ says, "I then travelled with him for awhile until I found an opportunity. I then attacked him with my sword and killed him. I then left, leaving his wives falling over him. When I came to Rasulullaah ﷺ and he saw me, he said, 'A look of success.' 'I have killed him,' I said. 'True,' was the reply. Rasulullaah ﷺ then stood up with me, took me in his room and gave me a staff saying, 'Keep this staff with you, O Abdullaah bin Unays.' When I left with the staff and came to the people, they asked, 'What is this staff?' I replied, 'Rasulullaah ﷺ gave it to me with instructions to keep it with me.' When they told me to return to Rasulullaah ﷺ to ask him about it, I complied. When I got to Rasulullaah ﷺ, I asked, 'O Rasulullaah ﷺ! Why have you given me this staff?' Rasulullaah ﷺ replied, 'It is a token between you and me on the Day of Qiyaamah because on that day there shall be few people carrying staffs (few people with the support of their good deeds).'"

Hadhrt Abdullaah bin Unays ﷺ tied the staff to his sword and it remained with him throughout his life. When he passed away, he instructed that it should be included in his burial clothes and buried with him. <sup>(1)</sup>

## Performing Salaah at Night While out in the path of Allaah

Hadhrt Urwa ﷺ narrates that when the two armies confronted each other for the Battle of Yarmook, Qubqulaar (a Roman commander) dispatched an Arab (to spy on the Muslims). The last portion of the narration states that (after the spy returned) Qubqulaar asked him what he had noticed. The spy replied, "They

(1) Ahmad, as quoted in *Al Bidaaya wan Nihaaya* (Vol.4 Pg.140).

**Muslims are engaged in worship by night and seasoned horsemen by day.** (1)

In a lengthy narration of Abu Is'haaq, it is mentioned that Heraclius (the Roman Emperor) asked (his generals), "What is the matter? Why are you being defeated (by the Muslims)?" An old man from amongst his senior officers replied, "Because the Muslims stand in worship during the night and fast during the day." (2)

More Ahadeeth on this subject will be discussed in the chapter dealing with the reasons for which divine assistance came. In the chapter titled "Women pledged Their allegiance" (3), the narration has passed which states that Hadhrat Hind رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهَا said (to her husband Hadhrat Abu Sufyaan رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ), "I wish to pledge allegiance to Muhammad ﷺ." Hadhrat Abu Sufyaan رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ said, "But I have noticed that you have always been rejecting what he says." She replied, "By Allaah! That it true. However, I swear by Allaah that before this night I have never seen Allaah being worshipped in this Masjid as He deserves to be worshipped. By Allaah! The Muslims spent the entire night performing salaah standing, bowing down and prostrating."

## Engaging in Dhikr While Out in the path of Allaah.

The Dhikr of the Sahabah رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُمْ the Night they Conquered Makkah  
Hadhrat Sa'eed bin Musayyib رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ narrates that on the night after the Muslims entered Makkah as conquerors, they continuously recited "Allaahu Akbar", "Laa Ilaaha Illallaah" and performed Tawaaf of the Kabah until dawn broke. Hadhrat Abu Sufyaan رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ then said to his wife Hind رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهَا, "Do you not see that all this is from Allaah?" "Yes," she replied, "this certainly is from Allaah." The next morning Hadhrat Abu Sufyaan رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ went early to Rasulullaah ﷺ. Rasulullaah ﷺ said, "(Last night) You said to Hind, 'Do you not see that all this is from Allaah?' and she replied, 'Yes, this certainly is from Allaah.'" Hadhrat Abu Sufyaan رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ exclaimed, "I testify that you are certainly the servant and Rasul of Allaah! I swear by the Being in Whose name I take oaths that no one but Hind heard this statement of mine." (4)

## The Dhikr of the Sahabah رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُمْ as they Stood over a Valley During the Battle of Khaybar

Hadhrat Abu Moosa Ash'ari رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ narrates that when Rasulullaah ﷺ left on a military expedition to Khaybar, the Sahabah رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُمْ had reached a valley when they raised their voices reciting, "Allaahu Akbar! Laa Ilaaha Illallaah!" Rasulullaah ﷺ said to them, "Have mercy on yourselves (do not exert yourselves) for you are not calling someone who is deaf or absent. You are calling One Who is All Hearing, Who is close and Who is always with you."

Hadhrat Abu Moosa Ash'ari رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ narrates further that he was behind the

(1) Tabari (Vol.2 Pg.610).

(2) Ahmad bin Marwaan Maaliki as well as Ibn Asaakir (Vol.1 Pg.143), narrating from Ibn Is'haaq.

(3) Under the subheading "Hadhrat Faatima bint Utba رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهَا Pledges Allegiance Along with her Sister Hadhrat Hind رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهَا who was the Wife of Hadhrat Abu Sufyaan I".

(4) Bayhaqi, as quoted in *Al Bida'aya wan Nihaaya* (Vol.4 Pg.304). Ibn Asaakir has also reported the narration authentically, as quoted in *Kanzul Ummaal* (Vol.5 Pg.297).

animal of Rasulullaah ﷺ when Rasulullaah ﷺ overheard him say, "Laa Howla wa Laa Quwwata Illaa Billaah (There is no power or might except with Allaah)." Rasulullaah ﷺ then said, "O Abdullaah bin Qais!" Hadhrat Abu Moosa Ash'ari ﷺ replied by saying, "I am at your service, O Rasulullaah ﷺ!" Rasulullaah ﷺ told him, "Should I not inform you of words that are from the treasures of Jannah?" Hadhrat Abu Moosa Ash'ari ﷺ said, "Please do, O Rasulullaah ﷺ! May my parents be sacrificed for you." Rasulullaah ﷺ enlightened him by saying, "(The words are) Laa Howla wa Laa Quwwata Illaa Billaah (There is no power or might except with Allaah)." (1)

## The Sahabah ﷺ Recite Takbeer and Tasbeeh when Ascending and Descending Inclines

Hadhrt Jaabir ﷺ narrates that whenever they (the Sahabah ﷺ) ascended an incline, they recited Takbeer and whenever they descended from an incline, they recited Tasbeeh. (2)

## The Statement of Hadhrt Abdullaah bin Umar ﷺ that the People Embarking on Military Expeditions are of Two types

Hadhrt Abdullaah bin Umar ﷺ said, "On an expedition, people are of two types. One type are those who go out and abundantly engage in the Dhikr of Allaah together with maintaining the consciousness of Allaah. They stay away from evil on their journey, assist their companions (physically and financially) and spend the best of their wealth. They are more keen on the wealth they spend (in the path of Allaah) than the wealth they use to benefit their worldly lives. When they are in war situations, they feel ashamed that Allaah should discover any doubts in their hearts or that He should find them failing to assist the Muslims. Even if they are in a position of misappropriating the booty, they cleanse their hearts and deeds from any such activity. Shaytaan is therefore unable to involve them in sin or to whisper evil into their hearts. It is through such people that Allaah strengthens and gives honour to His Deen and defeats His enemies."

"As for the second type. They go out without engaging in abundant Dhikr and without being conscious of Allaah. They do not abstain from evil and are reluctant to spend their wealth. They regard whatever they spend as a tax and this is what Shaytaan tells them. In the battle situation they remain with those right at the back and those who render absolutely no help. They stick to the tops of mountains watching what the others are doing and speak the worst of lies when Allaah grants victory (by boasting about feats they did not achieve). Should they have the opportunity to misappropriate the spoils of war, they boldly do so

(1) Bukhari and the other five. As quoted in *Al Bidaaya wan Nihaaya* (Vol.4 Pg.213), this incident occurred during the return from Khaybar because Hadhrt Abu Moosa ﷺ arrived in Madinah only after the conquest of Khaybar.

(2) Bukhari and Nasa'ee in *Yawm wal Layla*, as quoted by Ayni (Vol.7 Pg.36).

with the booty of Allaah, as Shaytaan tells them that these are merely spoils of war (and they therefore have a right to do as they please with it). When conditions are favorable, they boast and when they encounter any obstacle, Shaytaan misleads them to place their needs before people. They shall have no share of the rewards of the Mu'mineen. All they shall have to show is that their bodies were with the bodies of the Mu'mineen and that they travelled with the Mu'mineen. Their intentions and deeds vary and Allaah shall judge them when He gathers them on the Day of Qiyaamah." (1)

## Being Particular About Making Du'aa when in Jihaad in the path of Allaah

### Making Du'aa when Leaving a Place

The Duaa of Rasulullaah ﷺ as he Left Makkah for the Hijrah

Hadhrat Muhammad bin Is'haaq says that he was informed that when Rasulullaah ﷺ left Makkah to make Hijrah to Mādinah for the pleasure of Allaah, he said, "All praises belong to Allaah Who has created me when I had been nothing. O Allaah! Assist me against the fears of this world, the evils of the times and the calamities of the nights and days. O Allaah! Be my companion on my journey, be my deputy amongst my family and grant me blessings in that which You provide for me. Make me humble before You, keep me steadfast on good character, make me beloved to You and never hand me over to people. O Rabb of the weak ones, you are my Rabb as well. I seek refuge in Your munificent countenance by which the skies and the earth are illuminated, by which darkness is dispersed and by which the affairs of the past people were set right. I seek Your protection from attracting Your wrath on me and having Your anger descend on me. I seek Your protection from losing Your bounties, from Your sudden punishment, from losing Your safety and from all causes of Your wrath. Securing Your pleasure is better than all the deeds I am capable of doing. There is no power or might except with You." (2)

### Making Du'aa when Within Sight of a Place

#### The Du'aa Rasulullaah ﷺ when he Saw Khaybar

The grandfather of Hadhrat Abu Marwaan Aslami narrates that they accompanied Rasulullaah ﷺ to Khaybar. When they got close (to Khaybar) and could see it, Rasulullaah ﷺ instructed the Sahabah ﷺ to stop. When they came to a halt, Rasulullaah ﷺ prayed, "O Allaah the Rabb of the seven skies and whatever they shade! O Rabb of the seven earths and whatever they bear! O Rabb of the Shayaateen and whoever they mislead! O Rabb of the winds and whatever they carry! We beg of you the best of this town, the best of its inhabitants and the best of whatever it contains. We seek Your protection from the evii of this town,

(1) Ibn Asaakir, as quoted in *Kanzul Ummaal* (Vol.2 Pg.290).

(2) Abu Nu'aym, as quoted in *Al Bidaaya wan Nihaaya* (Vol.3 Pg.178).

the evil of its inhabitants and the evil of whatever it contains." Rasulullaah ﷺ then said (to the Sahabah رَوَاهُ مُحَمَّدٌ), "Proceed in the name of Allaah!" (1)

A narration of Tabraani states that Rasulullaah ﷺ used to make this du'aa each time he entered a town.

## Making Du'aa at the Beginning of the Battle

### The Du'aa Rasulullaah ﷺ Made on the Occasion of the Battle of Badr

Hadhrat Umar رَوَاهُ مُحَمَّدٌ narrates that on the day of the Battle of Badr, Rasulullaah ﷺ looked at his Sahabah رَوَاهُ مُحَمَّدٌ who numbered just over three hundred. He then looked at the Mushrikeen who numbered over a thousand. **Wearing only an upper and lower garment**, Rasulullaah ﷺ then turned towards the Qibla and prayed, "O Allaah! Fulfil Your promise to me. O Allaah! If this group of Muslims is destroyed, You will never again be worshipped on earth." Rasulullaah ﷺ continued seeking Allaah's help and praying to Him until his upper garment fell off. Hadhrat Abu Bakr رَوَاهُ مُحَمَّدٌ came to put the garment on again and then held on to Rasulullaah ﷺ from behind saying, "O Rasulullaah ﷺ! What you have so persistently asked from your Rabb is sufficient for He will certainly fulfil the promise He made to you." It was then that Allaah revealed the verse:

﴿ اذ تَسْتَعِينُونَ رَبِّكُمْ فَاسْتَجَابَ لَكُمْ اِنِّي مُدِّدٌ كُمْ بِالْفِ مِنْ الْمَلِيكَةِ مُرْدِفِينَ ﴾

(سورة الانفال: ٩)

(O Muhammad ﷺ, remember the time before the Battle of Badr) When you sought help from your Rabb and He accepted your du'aa saying, "I shall strengthen (reinforce) you with a thousand angels who will appear one after another (to help you fight the Mushrikeen)." {Surah Anfaal, verse 9} (2)

Hadhrat Abdullaah bin Amr bin Al Aas رَوَاهُ مُحَمَّدٌ narrates that Rasulullaah ﷺ left for Badr with three hundred and fifteen men. When they reached Badr, Rasulullaah ﷺ prayed, "O Allaah! They (my Sahabah رَوَاهُ مُحَمَّدٌ) are barefoot, so do grant them transport. O Allaah! They are scantily clothed, so do clothe them. O Allaah! They are hungry, so do fill their bellies." **When Allaah granted them victory in the Battle of Badr and they returned, there was not a single one of them who did not possess one or two camels. They also had clothing to wear and had eaten to their fill.** (3)

Hadhrat Abdullaah bin Mas'ood رَوَاهُ مُحَمَّدٌ says that he had never heard a du'aa

(1) Bayhaqi and Ibn Is'haaq, as quoted in *Al Bidaaya wan Nihaaya* (Vol.4 Pg.183). Tabraani has also reported the narration and Haythami (Vol.10 Pg.135) has commented on the chain of narrators.

(2) Ahmad, Muslim, Abu Dawood, Tirmidhi, Ibn Jareer and others, as quoted in *Al Bidaaya wan Nihaaya* (Vol.3 Pg.275). Ibn Abi Shayba, Abu Awaana, Ibn Hibbaan, Abu Nu'aym, Ibn Mundhir, Ibn Abi Haatim, Abu Shaykh, Ibn Mardway and Bayhaqi, as quoted in *Kanzul Ummaal* (Vol.5 Pg.266).

(3) Abu Dawood, as quoted in *Jam'ul Fawaa'id* (Vol.2 Pg.38). Bayhaqi (Vol.9 Pg.57) and Ibn Sa'd (Vol.2 Pg.13) have also reported the narration.

more persistent than the du'aa Rasulullaah ﷺ made on the occasion of the Battle of Badr. He prayed, "O Allaah! I am beseeching You in the name of Your promise and pledge. O Allaah! If this group is destroyed, You will not be worshipped." When Rasulullaah ﷺ turned around, his face appeared to be a part of the moon as he said, "It is as if I can see the places where they (the dead Mushrikeen) will lie by tonight." (1)

## The Du'aa Rasulullaah ﷺ made on the Occasions of the Battle of Uhud and the Battle of Khandaq

Hadhrat Anas ﷺ narrates that on the day that the Battle of Uhud was fought, Rasulullaah ﷺ repetitively said, "O Allaah! (Do assist us) If You (choose not to assist us) none would worship You on earth." (2)

Hadhrat Abu Sa'eed Khudri ﷺ narrates that on the occasion of the Battle of Khandaq; the Sahabah ﷺ asked Rasulullaah ﷺ, "O Rasulullaah ﷺ! Is there any du'aa that we could make on this occasion because our hearts have reached our throats." Rasulullaah ﷺ replied, "Yes," and then recited the following du'aa:

“اللَّهُمَّ اسْتُرْ عَوْرَاتِنَا وَامِنْ رُءُوسِنَا”

"O Allaah! Conceal our faults and calm our fears."

Hadhrat Abu Sa'eed Khudri ﷺ completes the narration by saying, "(When we started reciting the du'aa) Allaah smote the faces of His enemies (defeated them) by sending a powerful wind against them." (3)

Hadhrat Jaabir ﷺ narrates that Rasulullaah ﷺ once went to Masjid Ahzaab and placed his shawl aside. He then stood up and stretched his hands out to curse the Mushrikeen army. On this occasion, he did not perform any salaah. Rasulullaah ﷺ then went there again, again cursed them and this time performed (two Rakaahs) salaah. (4)

A narration of Bukhari and Muslim state that Rasulullaah ﷺ cursed the conglomeration of Kuffaar forces (when they attacked Madinah) by saying, "O Allaah Who has revealed the Qur'aan, Who is quick in reckoning and Who will defeat the mass of troops! O Allaah! Defeat them and shake (destabilise) them." Another narration states that Rasulullaah ﷺ prayed, "O Allaah! Defeat them and assist us against them." Another narration of Bukhari related by Hadhrat Abu Hurayra ﷺ mentions that the du'aa Rasulullaah ﷺ made was: "There is none worthy of worship but the One Allaah Who has given honour to His army, assisted His servant and defeated the coalition of forces all by Himself. There is nothing after Him." (5)

(1) Nasa'ee, as quoted in *Al Bidaaya wan Nihaaya* (Vol.3 Pg.276). Tabraani has also reported the narration and Haythami (Vol.6 Pg.82) has commented on the chain of narrators.

(2) Ahmad and Muslim, as quoted in *Al Bidaaya wan Nihaaya* (Vol.4 Pg.28).

(3) Ahmad and Ibn Abi Haatim.

(4) Muslim and Ahmad.

(5) *Al Bidaaya wan Nihaaya* (Vol.4 Pg.111).

## Making Du'aa During the Battle

### The Du'aa Rasulullaah ﷺ Made While Fighting During the Battle of Badr

Hadhrat Ali ﷺ says, "After fighting for a while during the Battle of Badr, I rushed to see how Rasulullaah ﷺ was keeping. When I arrived there, Rasulullaah ﷺ was in Sajdah praying, 'Yaa Hayyu! Yaa Qayyoom! Yaa Hayyu! Yaa Qayyoom! (O The Living, The Controller! O The Living, The Controller!).' Rasulullaah ﷺ said nothing more. I then returned to the fight and when I got back to Rasulullaah ﷺ, he was still in Sajdah repeating the same words. Rasulullaah ﷺ continued in this manner until Allaah gave him victory." (1)

### Making Du'aa During the night (of a Battle)

#### The Du'aa Rasulullaah ﷺ Made on the Night Before the Battle of Badr

Hadhrat Ali ﷺ narrates that on the night before the Battle of Badr, Rasulullaah ﷺ spent the night in salaah praying, "O Allaah! If this group is destroyed, You will never again be worshipped on earth." That night, some rain fell (causing the firm ground where the Mushrikeen stood to become muddy and the soft ground where the Muslims stood to become firm). (2) Another narration from Hadhrat Ali ﷺ states that although Rasulullaah ﷺ was a Musaaafir (traveller), he had spent the entire night in Ibaadah till the morning that the Battle of Badr was fought. (3)

### Making Du'aa after Finishing the Battle

#### The Du'aa of Rasulullaah ﷺ after the Battle of Uhud

Hadhrat Rifaa'ah Zuraqi ﷺ narrates that when the Mushrikeen had returned after the Battle of Uhud, Rasulullaah ﷺ said, "Stand straight so that I may praise my Rabb ﷻ." When the Sahabah ﷺ had arranged themselves into rows behind Rasulullaah ﷺ, he said, "O Allaah! Every type of praise belongs to You. O Allaah! There is none to restrain what You give in abundance and none to give anything that You restrain. None can guide the one whom You cause to deviate and none can deviate the one whom You guide. None can give what You hold back and none can hold back what You give. None can bring close that which You make distant and none can make distant that which You bring close. O Allaah! Grant us in abundance Your blessings, Your mercy, Your grace

(1) Bayhaqi and Nasa'ee in his "Al Yawn wal Layla", as quoted in *Al Bidaaya wan Nihaaya* (Vol.3 Pg.275). Bazaar, Abu Ya'la, Firyabi and Haakim have also reported the narration, as quoted in *Kanzul Ummaal* (Vol.5 Pg.267).

(2) Ibn Mardway and Sa'eed bin Jubayr, as quoted in *Kanzul Ummaal* (Vol.5 Pg.267).

(3) Abu Ya'la and Ibn Hibbaan, as quoted in *Kanzul Ummaal* (Vol.5 Pg.267).

and Your sustenance. O Allaah! I ask from You Your everlasting bounties that never change and are never lost. O Allaah! I beseech You for bounties on that day of poverty (Qiyaamah) and for safety on the day of fear. O Allaah! I seek Your protection from the evil of that which You have given us and from the evil of that which You have held back from us. O Allaah! Make Imaan beloved to us and beautify it in our hearts. Make kufr, sin and disobedience abhorrent to us and make us amongst the rightly guided ones. O Allaah! Grant us death as Muslims, keep us living as Muslims and allow us to meet up with the righteous ones (in the Aakhirah) without suffering any humiliation and without having to endure any trials. O Allaah! Destroy the Kuffaar who call Your messengers liars and who prevent others from Your path. Set on them Your punishment and chastisement. O Allaah! O the True Deity! Destroy also those Kuffaar to whom You have given scriptures." (1)

The du'aa that Rasulullaah ﷺ made after giving Da'wah to the people of Taa'if has already been related in the chapter entitled: "Rasulullaah ﷺ Endures Hardship and Difficulty when Giving Da'wah towards Allaah". (2)

Being Particular About Ta'leem (Learning and teaching) when in Jihaad in the path of Allaah

The Statement of Hadhrat Abdullaah bin Abbaas رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ Concerning the Verse "It is not for the Mu'mineen to proceed (in Jihaad) all together..."

Hadhrat Abdullaah bin Abbaas رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ says, "Allaah has stated:

﴿يَا أَيُّهَا الَّذِينَ آمَنُوا خُذُوا حِذْرَكُمْ فَانفِرُوا نُبَاتٍ أَوْ ائْفِرُوا جَمِيعًا﴾ (سورة النساء: ٧١)

Take your precautions (*your weapons and other means to guard yourselves against your enemies*) and advance (*in Jihaad against them*) in groups or all together. {Surah Nisaa, verse 71}

﴿انْفِرُوا خِفَافًا وَثِقَالًا وَجَاهِدُوا بِأَمْوَالِكُمْ وَأَنْفُسِكُمْ فِي سَبِيلِ اللَّهِ ذَلِكُمْ خَيْرٌ لَّكُمْ

إِنْ كُنْتُمْ تَعْلَمُونَ﴾ (سورة التوبة: ٤١)

Proceed (*in the path of Allaah*) when light or heavy (*happily or reluctantly, rich or poor, in good conditions and adverse conditions*). {Surah Taubah, verse 41}

﴿الَّذِينَ لَا يُغْنِي عَنْكُمْ كُفْرُكُمْ إِذَا لَقُوا اللَّهَ لَوَّىٰ وُجُوهُهُم مُّسْتَبْسِطِينَ وَلَا يَتَذَكَّرُونَ أَلَّا يَكْفُرُوا بِاللَّهِ عَلَىٰ

كُلِّ شَيْءٍ قَدِيرٌ﴾ (سورة التوبة: ٣٩)

If you do not go forth, Allaah shall punish you severely... {Surah Taubah, verse 39}

However, these verses were later abrogated when Allaah revealed the verse:

(1) Ahmad and Nasa'ee in his "Al Yowm wal Laylah", as quoted in *Al Bidaaya wan Nihaaya* (Vol.4 Pg.38). Bukhari in his *Adab, Tabraani, Baghawi, Baawardi, Abu Nu'aym in Hilya, Haakim and Bayhaqi* have also reported the narration, as quoted in *Kanzul Ummaal* (Vol.5 Pg.276). Dhahabi and Haythami (Vol.6 Pg.122) have both commented on the chain of narrators.

(2) Under the subheading: "The Du'aa Rasulullaah ﷺ made after Leaving Taa'if".

﴿وَمَا كَانَ الْمُؤْمِنُونَ لِيَنْفِرُوا كَافَّةً ۚ فَلَوْلَا نَفَرَ مِنْ كُلِّ فِرْقَةٍ مِّنْهُمْ طَائِفَةٌ لِّيَتَفَقَّهُوا فِي

الدِّينِ وَلِيُنذِرُوا قَوْمَهُمْ إِذَا رَجَعُوا إِلَيْهِمْ لَعَلَّهُمْ يَحْذَرُونَ﴾ (سورة التوبة: ١٢٢)

It is not (*correct*) for the Mu'mineen to proceed (*in Jihaad*) all together (*simultaneously when it is not Fardh for all to participate*). {Surah Taubah, verse 122}

Then was the practice that while a party of Muslims would march with Rasulullaah ﷺ, another party would remain behind. Those that remained behind with Rasulullaah ﷺ would attain a deep understanding of Deen so that they may warn their people (those who had been engaged in Jihaad) when they return to them from the expeditions. In this manner, they were aware of what Allaah revealed in the Qur'aan, about their obligations and about the limits that Allaah had set." (1)

## The Letter of Hadhrat Umar رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ to his Commanders about Attaining a Deep Understanding of Deen

Hadhrot Ahwas bin Hakeem bin Umayr Absi narrates that Hadhrot Umar رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ wrote the following in a letter addressed to the commanders of the various Muslims armies, "Endeavour to attain a deep understanding of Deen because no person can be excused for pursuing falsehood thinking that it is the truth. Similarly, no one can be excused for forsaking the truth in the belief that it is falsehood." (2)

## The Sahabah رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُمْ sit in Gatherings (To Learn and Teach) while on Journey

Hadhrot Hitaan bin Abdullaah Raaqashi narrates that they were once part of an army under the command of Hadhrot Abu Moosa Ash'ari رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ. They were travelling along the banks of the Tigris River when the time for salaah arrived. After someone had called out the Adhaan for the Zuhr salaah, the people started making wudhu and Hadhrot Abu Moosa Ash'ari رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ also made wudhu. He then led them in salaah, after which they all sat in groups. When the time for the Asr salaah arrived, someone called out the Adhaan for Asr and the people again stood up to make wudhu. Hadhrot Abu Moosa Ash'ari رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ then instructed the Mu'adhin to announce, "Take note that none should make wudhu besides those whose wudhu had broken." Hadhrot Abu Moosa Ash'ari رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ then said, "It seems imminent that knowledge shall disappear and ignorance will prosper to the extent that because of ignorance, a man will use his sword to kill his own mother." (3)

(1) Bayhaqi (Vol.9 Pg.47).

(2) Aadam bin Abi Ayaas in his Ilm, as quoted in *Kanzul Ummaal* (Vol.5 Pg.228).

(3) Abdur Razaq, as quoted in *Kanzul Ummaal* (Vol.5 Pg.114) and Tahaawi in his *Sharhu Ma'aanil Aathaar* (Vol.1 Pg.27).

## Spending While in Jihaad in the Path of Allaah

### The Spending of Some Sahabah ﷺ in the Path of Allaah

Hadhrat Abu Mas'ood Ansaari ﷺ narrates that a man came with a reined camel and said, "(I am donating) This camel in the path of Allaah." Rasulullaah ﷺ said, "You shall have seven hundred camels in exchange for it on the Day of Qiyaamah. Each one of those will also have reins." (1)

Hadhrat Abdullaah bin Saamit narrates, "I was with Hadhrat Abu Dharr ﷺ when he received his allowance (from the state treasury). Hadhrat Abu Dharr ﷺ had his slave girl with him, who started paying off all his expenses (with the money). Only seven Dirhams were left over, which he instructed her to convert into change. I said to him, '(Wouldn't it be better) If you kept it back for a need that may arise or for a guest that may come to you?' He replied, 'My beloved friend (Rasulullaah ﷺ) advised me saying, 'Any gold or silver that is tied up in a bag (put away for the future) is live coal for its owner until he spends it in the path of Allaah.'"

A narration of Ahmad and Tabraani states that Rasulullaah ﷺ said, "When a person ties gold or silver in a bag and does not spend it in the path of Allaah, it will be live embers on the Day of Qiyaamah which will be used to brand him." (2)

~~~~~

Hadhrat Qais bin Sala Ansaari ﷺ narrates that his brothers laid a complaint (against him) before Rasulullaah ﷺ when they alleged that he wasted his wealth and gave out plenty. However, Hadhrat Qais ﷺ said, "O Rasulullaah ﷺ! I take only my share of the dates and spend it in the path of Allaah and on those in my company." Rasulullaah ﷺ then placed his hand on the chest of Hadhrat Qais ﷺ and thrice said, "**Spend and Allaah will spend on you.**" Hadhrat Qais ﷺ says, "Thereafter I always had transport when I went out in the path of Allaah and today I am the wealthiest person in my family (because of the blessings of spending in the path of Allaah)." (3)

### The Rewards of Spending in the path of Allaah

Hadhrat Mu'aadh bin Jabal ﷺ narrates that Rasulullaah ﷺ said, "Glad tidings for the person who abundantly engages in the Dhikr of Allaah while out in Jihaad in the path of Allaah because for every word he shall receive the rewards of seventy thousand good deeds. The reward for each one of these good deeds shall be multiplied ten times together with the extra that (he will receive which) is with Allaah." Someone asked, "O Rasulullaah ﷺ! And (what about) spending (in the path of Allaah)?" Rasulullaah ﷺ replied, "Spending is (rewarded) likewise."

(1) Muslim (Vol.2 Pg.37) and Nasa'ee, as quoted in *Jam'ul Fawaa'id* (Vol.2 Pg.3)

(2) Ahmad, as quoted in *Targheeb wat Tarheeb* (Vol.2 Pg.178).

(3) Tabraani in his *Awsat*, as quoted in *Targheeb wat Tarheeb* (Vol.2 Pg.173). Ibn Mandah has also reported the narration, as quoted in *Isaaba* (Vol.3 Pg.250).

One of the narrators by the name of Abdur Rahmaan says that he then asked Hadhrat Mu'aadh رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ, "But the reward of spending (in the path of Allaah) is multiplied seven hundred times." Hadhrat Mu'aadh رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ commented, "Your understanding is wanting. That (reward multiplied seven hundred times) is for people who spend (on others in the path of Allaah) while they are themselves with their families (at home) and not out on an expedition. However, when they march out themselves and then spend, Allaah keeps aside for them such things from the treasures of His mercy that far transcends the knowledge of man and his ability to describe it. Such people are the party of Allaah and the party of Allaah are always victorious." (1)

Hadhrt Ali رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ, Hadhrt Abu Dardaa رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ, Hadhrt Abu Hurayra رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ, Hadhrt Abu Umaama رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ, Hadhrt Abdullaah bin Amr bin Al Aas رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ, Hadhrt Jaabir رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ and Hadhrt Imraan bin Husayn رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ all narrate that Rasulullaah ﷺ stated, "The person who spends funds in the path of Allaah while he remains at home shall be rewarded with seven hundred Dirhams for every Dirham (that he spends). On the other hand, the person who himself marches out in the path of Allaah and then spends for Allaah's pleasure shall be rewarded with seven hundred thousand Dirhams for every Dirham (that he spends)." Rasulullaah ﷺ then recited the following verse:

﴿وَاللَّهُ يُضْعِفُ لِمَنْ يَشَاءُ﴾ (سورة البقرة: ٢٦١)

And Allaah multiplies (rewards) for whoever He wills. {Surah Baqara, verse 261} (2)  
In the chapter entitled "Rasulullaah ﷺ Encourages Striving in the path of Allaah and Spending One's Wealth for this Cause", it has already been narrated how much was spent by Sahabah رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُمْ such as Hadhrt Abu Bakr رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ, Hadhrt Umar رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ, Hadhrt Uthmaan رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ, Hadhrt Talha رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ, Hadhrt Abdur Rahmaan bin Auf رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ, Hadhrt Abbaas رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ, Hadhrt Sa'd bin Ubaadah رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ, Hadhrt Muhammad bin Maslama رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ and Hadhrt Aasim bin Adi رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ. More details will be mentioned in a forthcoming chapter specifically dealing with the spending of the Sahabah رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُمْ.

## Proceeding in Jihaad in the Path of Allaah with a Sincere Intention

### There Shall be no Rewards for the person whose Intention is to Gain Fame and Fortune

Hadhrt Abu Hurayra رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ narrates that someone asked, "O Rasulullaah ﷺ! (Tell me about) A person who intends to wage Jihaad and also has the intention of earning some worldly profits." Rasulullaah ﷺ replied, "He shall not be rewarded." Regarding this to be a very serious matter, the Sahabah رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُمْ said to the person, "Please repeat what you have asked Rasulullaah ﷺ. Perhaps you did not explain yourself to him properly." The man asked for the second time, "O

(1) Tabraani, Haythami (Vol.5 Pg.282) has commented on the chain of narrators.

(2) Qazweeni, as quoted in *Jam'ul Fawaa'id* (Vol.2 Pg.3).

Rasulullaah ﷺ! (Tell me about) A person who proceeds in Jihaad with the intention of earning some worldly profits?" Rasulullaah ﷺ repeated, "He shall not be rewarded." Again regarding this to be a very serious matter, the Sahabah رَوَاتُ النَّبِيِّ instructed the person to again repeat the question. The man asked for the third time, "O Rasulullaah ﷺ! (Tell me about) A person who proceeds in Jihaad with the intention of earning some worldly profits?" Rasulullaah ﷺ again repeated, "He shall not be rewarded." (1)

Hadhrat Abu Umaamah رَوَاتُ النَّبِيِّ narrates that a man approached Rasulullaah ﷺ with the query, "Tell me about a person who wages Jihaad in search of fame and fortune. What is there for him?" "There shall be nothing for him," replied Rasulullaah ﷺ. When the man repeated his question three times, Rasulullaah ﷺ replied each time, "There shall be nothing for him." Thereafter, Rasulullaah ﷺ added, "Allaah accepts only those actions that are carried out solely for Him, through which His pleasure is sought." (2)

### The Story of Quzmaan

Hadhrat Aasim bin Amr bin Qataadah رَوَاتُ النَّبِيِّ narrates that a man lived amongst them whose identity no one really knew. He was only known as Quzmaan. Whenever his name was mentioned, Rasulullaah ﷺ used to say, "He is from the inmates of Jahannam." He fought very fiercely during the Battle of Uhud and single-handedly killed seven to eight Mushrikeen. He was a true warrior. However, he was eventually incapacitated by a nasty wound. When he was carried to the Banu Zafar district, many Muslims said to him, "You fought with great courage today, O Quzmaan! Glad tidings to you!" He said, "Glad tidings for what? By Allaah! I fought only for the good name of my people. Had it not been for this, I would never have fought." When his wound became too much for him to bear, he took an arrow from his quiver and used it to commit suicide. (3)

### The Story of Usayram

It is reported that Hadhrat Abu Hurayra رَوَاتُ النَّبِيِّ used to often ask (the people around him), "Tell me about the person who entered Jannah without ever performing a single salaah?" When the people were unable to identify the person, they asked Hadhrat Abu Hurayra رَوَاتُ النَّبِيِّ about him. Hadhrat Abu Hurayra رَوَاتُ النَّبِيِّ would then say, "He was Usayram from the Banu Abdul Ash'hal tribe (whose real name was) Amr bin Thaabit bin Qais."

(One of the narrators) Hadhrat Husayn says that when he asked Hadhrat Mahmood bin Labeed about the story of Hadhrat Usayram رَوَاتُ النَّبِيِّ, he narrated, "He always refused to accept Islaam when his people invited him. On the day that the Battle of Uhud was fought, it suddenly occurred to him to accept Islaam and he did so. He then took his sword and proceeded until he entered the flanks of the enemy. There he fought until a wound crippled him. As some people from the

(1) Abu Dawood, Ibn Hibbaan and Haakim in brief, as quoted in *Targheeb wat Tarheeb* (Vol.2 Pg.419).

(2) Abu Dawood and Nasa'ee, as quoted in *Targheeb wat Tarheeb* (Vol.2 Pg.421).

(3) Ibn Is'haaq, as quoted in *Al Bidaaya wan Nihaaya* (Vol.4 Pg.36).

Banu Abdul Ash'hal tribe were searching the battlefield for their dead, they suddenly saw Hadhrat Usayram ﷺ and exclaimed, "By Allaah! This is Usayram! What has brought him here? We had left him behind (in Madinah) for he refused to accept the Kalimah." They therefore questioned him, "What has brought you here, O Amr? Was it the fondness of your people or your devotion to Islaam?" He replied, "It was my devotion to Islaam. I believed in Allaah and His Rasool ﷺ, accepted Islaam, took my sword and marched with Rasulullaah ﷺ. I then fought until I was injured." It was not long after this that he passed away in their hands. When the incident was mentioned to Rasulullaah ﷺ, he said, "He is certainly from amongst the people of Jannah." (1)

Hadhrat Abu Hurayra ﷺ narrates that because Hadhrat Amr bin Uqaysh ﷺ had given out a loan on interest during the Period of Ignorance, he disliked accepting Islaam until he had received the payment. When the Battle of Uhud took place, he asked, "Where are my cousins?" When he was informed that they were at Uhud, he exclaimed, "At Uhud!" He then donned his helmet, mounted his horse and rode towards them. Seeing him arrive, the Muslims called out, "Go away, O Amr!" He responded by saying, "I have already accepted Imaan." He then fought fiercely until he was wounded and carried off to his family as a wounded man. Hadhrat Sa'd bin Mu'aadh ﷺ then arrived there and asked his sister to ask Hadhrat Amr ﷺ whether he fought because of his camaraderie (friendship, allegiance) with his people or because he felt for Allaah and His Rasool ﷺ. Hadhrat Amr ﷺ replied, "Because I felt for Allaah and His Rasool ﷺ." He then passed away and entered Jannah even though he had never had the opportunity to perform a single salaah for Allaah. (2)

## The Story of a Bedouin

Hadhrat Shaddaad ibnul Haad narrates that a Bedouin once came to Rasulullaah ﷺ, accepted Imaan and became a devoted follower of Rasulullaah ﷺ. He then undertook to make Hijrah and stay with Rasulullaah ﷺ (in Madinah). After the Battle of Khaybar, much booty came to Rasulullaah ﷺ and he distributed it (amongst the Muslim soldiers). Rasulullaah ﷺ also stipulated a share for that particular Bedouin Sahabi ﷺ and handed it over to his friends (to give it to him) since he was busy grazing the animals. When they came to give his share (of the booty) to him, the Sahabi ﷺ asked, "What is this?" "It is your share of the booty that Rasulullaah ﷺ has stipulated for you," they replied. He said, "I did not follow him for this. Instead, I followed him so that I may die and enter Jannah when an arrow strikes me here." He then pointed towards his throat. Rasulullaah ﷺ said, "If you are true, Allaah will make it come true."

(1) Ibn Is'haaq, as quoted in *Al Bidaaya wan Nihaaya* (Vol.4 Pg.37) with a reliable chain of narrators as confirmed in *Isaaba* (Vol.6 Pg.526). Abu Nu'aym has also reported the narration in his *Ma'rifah*, as quoted in *Kanzul Ummaal* (Vol.7 Pg.8). Ahmad has also reported the narration as quoted in *Majma'uz Zawaa'id* (Vol.9 Pg.362).

(2) Abu Dawood and Haakim narrating from reliable sources as confirmed in *Isaaba* (Vol.2 Pg.526). Bayhaqi (Vol.9 Pg.167) has also reported the narration.

The Sahabah رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُمْ then engaged in battle against the enemy and (after fighting and being martyred) the Sahabi رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ was brought to Rasulullaah ﷺ. He had been struck by an arrow at exactly the same spot he had pointed towards. Rasulullaah ﷺ asked, "Is it he?" When the Sahabah رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُمْ confirmed that it was him, Rasulullaah ﷺ said, "He was true to Allaah and Allaah made his intention come true." Rasulullaah ﷺ then shrouded the Sahabi رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ in a coat that belonged to Rasulullaah ﷺ, after which he placed the corpse before him and led the Janaazah salaah (funeral prayer). Whilst making du'aa for the Sahabi رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ, the following words of Rasulullaah ﷺ were heard: "O Allaah! Here lies Your servant who migrated in Your path. He was killed as a martyr and I am his witness." (1)

### The Story of a Black Sahabi رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ

Hadhrat Anas رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ narrates that a man came to Rasulullaah ﷺ saying, "O Rasulullaah ﷺ! I am a man with a black skin, an ugly face and without any wealth. Will I enter Jannah if I fight those people (the Kuffaar army)?" "Certainly," replied Rasulullaah ﷺ. The man then advanced and fought until he was martyred. When Rasulullaah ﷺ came by his corpse, Rasulullaah ﷺ said, "Allaah has beautified your face, made you fragrant and increased your wealth." (Addressing the Sahabah رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُمْ) Rasulullaah ﷺ then said, "I have seen his two wives from the wide-eyed damsels of Jannah pulling at his coat, disputing with each other about who will enter between his skin and his coat." (2)

### The Story of Hadhrat Amr bin Al Aas رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ

Hadhrat Amr bin Al Aas رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ narrates that Rasulullaah ﷺ once sent a message to him stating, "Get your clothes and weapons on and come to me." When he got to Rasulullaah ﷺ, Rasulullaah ﷺ said, "I wish to send you out in command of an army. Allaah will keep you safe and grant you much booty. I shall also grant you a fine portion of the booty." Hadhrat Amr bin Al Aas رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ said, "O Rasulullaah ﷺ! I did not accept Islaam for wealth but accepted Islaam for the love of Islaam." Rasulullaah ﷺ said, "O Amr! Good wealth is a fine thing for a good man." (3)

According to another narration, Hadhrat Amr bin Al Aas رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ also said, "I accepted Islaam for the love of Islaam and to be with the Rasool of Allaah ﷺ." Rasulullaah ﷺ said, "Indeed, but good wealth is a fine thing for a good man." (4)

### The Statements of Hadhrat Umar رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ Concerning Martyrs

Hadhrat Abul Bakhtari Taa'ee narrates that many people in Kufa gathered with

(1) Bayhaqi and Nasa'ee, as quoted in *Al Bidaaya wan Nihaaya* (Vol.4 Pg.191). Haakim (Vol.3 Pg.595) has also reported the narration.

(2) Bayhaqi, as quoted in *Al Bidaaya wan Nihaaya* (Vol.4 Pg.191). Haakim has also reported the narration, as quoted in *Targheeb wat Tarheeb* (Vol.2 Pg.447).

(3) Ahmad, as quoted in *Isaaba* (Vol.3 Pg.3).

(4) Tabraani in his *Awsat* and *Kabeer*, as quoted in *Majma'uz Zawaa'id* (Vol.9 Pg.353).

Hadhrat Abul Mukhtar the father of Mukhtar bin Abu Ubayd at the bridge of Abu Ubayd. This was the place where Hadhrat Abu Ubayd (Thaqafi) was martyred (along with his entire battalion in the year 13 A.H.). All were martyred save for two or three men who used their swords to attack the enemy lines with such force that they opened up a path for themselves through which to escape. They eventually reached Madinah.

As the three were sitting one day and discussing about the others (those who were killed in the battle), Hadhrat Umar رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ came to them and asked, "Tell me what you have been discussing about them?" They replied, "We were seeking forgiveness on their behalf and making du'aa for them." Hadhrat Umar رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ threatened, "You will have to tell me what you were saying about them otherwise you will receive harsh treatment from me." They said, "We were saying that they are martyrs."

Hadhrat Umar رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ then said, "I swear by the Being besides Whom there is no deity, Who has sent Muhammad ﷺ with the truth and without Whose command Qiyaamah will never take place! No living being knows what a dead person will receive by Allaah except for the Nabi of Allaah ﷺ because Allaah has forgiven all his past and future errors. I swear by the Being besides Whom there is no deity, Who has sent Muhammad ﷺ with the truth and guidance and without Whose command Qiyaamah will never take place! There are people who fight to show off, others who fight because of their tribal fanaticism, those who fight to attain worldly gain and those who fight for wealth. All those who fight will receive by Allaah only that which was in their hearts." (1)

Hadhrat Maalik bin Aws bin Hadathaan رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ narrates that they were busy discussing an army that was martyred during the Khilaafah of Hadhrat Umar رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ when one of them commented, "They were the workers of Allaah out in the path of Allaah so their rewards will be with Allaah." Another person observed, "Allaah will resurrect them (on the Day of Qiyaamah) according to the intentions they died with." To this, Hadhrat Umar رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ remarked, "Correct. I swear by the Being Who controls my life that Allaah will certainly resurrect them according to the intentions they died with. There are people who fight for show and boasting while others fight with the intention of gaining things of this world. There are also those whom the battle takes by surprise and they have no option but to fight. Then there are those who fight with perseverance and with hope of rewards from Allaah. These are the true martyrs. In fact, even I have no idea of what will happen to me (in the Aakhirah) or of what will happen to you. All I do know is that the occupant of this grave (Rasulullaah ﷺ) has all his past and future errors forgiven." (2)

Hadhrat Masrooq narrates that when mention was made of some martyrs in front of Hadhrat Umar رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ, he addressed the people saying, "Whom do you regard to be martyrs?" The people replied, "O Ameerul Mu'mineen! Martyrs are those

(1) *Kanzul Ummaal* (Vol.2 Pg.292). Haafidh Ibn Hajar رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ has commented on the chain of narrators.

(2) Tammaam.

who are killed in these battles." When he received this reply, Hadhrat Umar **رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ** said, "In that case, martyrs will be plenty. Let me enlighten you on the subject. Bravery and cowardliness are natural traits amongst people which Allaah places wherever He wills. The truly brave person is therefore the one who fights with fervour without caring whether he returns to his family. On the other hand, the coward is the one who flees from the battlefield on account of his wife. The true martyr is he who gives his life with the hope of earning rewards from Allaah. The true Muhaajir is he who leaves the acts that Allaah forbids and the true Muslim is he from whose tongue and hands other Muslims are safe." (1)

## **The Story of Hadhrat Abdullaah bin Zubayr **رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ** and his Mother **رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهَا****

Hadhrt Dimaam narrates that Hadhrt Abdullaah bin Zubayr **رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ** sent a message to his mother (Hadhrt Asmaa **رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهَا**) saying, "People have deserted me while those people (my enemies) are calling for a truce." Her reply was, "If you are out to revive the Book of Allaah and the Sunnah of Allaah's Nabi **ﷺ**, then die on the truth. However, if you are out in search of worldly gain, then there is no good in you whether you are alive or dead." (2)

## **Obeying the Instructions of the Ameer when Proceeding in Jihaad in the Path of Allaah**

### **Hadhrt Abu Moosa Ash'ari **رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ** Rebukes a Man who did not Carry out his Instructions**

Hadhrt Abu Maalik Ash'ari **رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ** narrates, "Rasulullaah **ﷺ** sent us on an expedition and appointed Hadhrt Sa'd bin Abi Waqqaas **رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ** as our commander. We set out and later set up camp somewhere. When a man stood up to saddle his horse, I asked him where he was off to. He replied, 'I am off to get fodder.' I said, 'Do not do anything until we ask our Ameer.' We then went to Abu Moosa Ash'ari **رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ** (in command of our battalion) and spoke to him about it. He said, 'It seems as if you want to return to you family.' When the man denied it, Abu Moosa Ash'ari **رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ** cautioned him, 'Watch what you say.' 'No (I do not wish to return home),' repeated the man. Abu Moosa Ash'ari **رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ** then said, 'You may proceed on the path of righteousness.' The man left and returned after a considerable portion of the night had passed. Hadhrt Abu Moosa Ash'ari **رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ** asked, 'Did you perhaps go to your family?' When the man denied it, Hadhrt Abu Moosa Ash'ari **رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ** cautioned, 'Watch what you say.' The man then admitted that he did. Hadhrt Abu Moosa Ash'ari **رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ** then said, 'You went to your family in fire, sat there in fire and returned in fire. Now start afresh (to do good so that your sin should be annulled).'" (3)

(1) Ibn Abi Shayba, as quoted in *Kanzul Ummaal* (Vol.2 Pg.292).

(2) Nu'aym bin Hamaad in his *Fitan*, as quoted in *Kanzul Ummaal* (Vol.7 Pg.57).

(3) Ibn Asaakir, as quoted in *Kanzul Ummaal* (Vol.3 Pg.169).

## Staying Together While out In Jihaad in the path of Allaah

### Rasulullaah ﷺ Criticises Separating in Valleys and Sealing Roads

Hadhrat Abu Tha'laba Khushani رضي الله عنه narrates that when the Muslims camped at a valley, they separated and dispersed. Rasulullaah ﷺ said, "Your separating in valleys is from Shaytaan." Thereafter, whenever they set up camp, they would stay together. <sup>(1)</sup> Another narration <sup>(2)</sup> adds that (the Sahabah رضي الله عنهم stayed so close together thereafter that) if a sheet was thrown over them, it would cover them all.

Hadhrat Mu'aadh Juhani رضي الله عنه narrates that he was on a certain expedition with Rasulullaah ﷺ when the Muslims (because they separated) they made the camp small (making it difficult for others to find space) and crowded the road (so that no one could pass). Rasulullaah ﷺ then sent someone to announce, "There is no (rewards for) Jihaad for the person who makes the camp small or seals a road." <sup>(3)</sup>

## Standing Guard While Out in the path of Allaah

### Hadhrat Anas bin Abi Marthad Ghanawi رضي الله عنه Stands Guard

Hadhrat Sahl bin Handhaliyya رضي الله عنه narrates that they marched with Rasulullaah ﷺ for the Battle of Hunayn and were marching with great speed until the afternoon. Hadhrat Sahl رضي الله عنه narrates further that he had completed the Zuhr salaah with Rasulullaah ﷺ when a horseman came to Rasulullaah ﷺ saying, "O Rasulullaah ﷺ! I rode ahead of you and got to the top of a certain mountain where I chanced to see the Hawaazin tribe watering their camels of their fathers along with their women, their animals and goats. They have all gathered at Hunayn. Rasulullaah ﷺ smiled and said, "Inshaa Allaah, that will all be booty for the Muslims tomorrow."

Rasulullaah ﷺ then announced, "Who will stand guard over us tonight?" Hadhrat Anas bin Abi Marthad Ghanawi رضي الله عنه said, "I will, O Rasulullaah ﷺ!" Rasulullaah ﷺ then instructed him to get mounted. When he mounted his horse and came to Rasulullaah ﷺ, Rasulullaah ﷺ briefed him by saying, "Go to that ravine in front and get to the top of it. (Be vigilant as you stand guard there and) Let not the enemy deceitfully get to you tonight." The next morning, Rasulullaah ﷺ went to the place where they performed salaah and performed

(1) Abu Dawood and Nasa'ee, as quoted in *Targheeb wat Tarheeb* (Vol.5 Pg.40).

(2) Bayhaqi (Vol.9 Pg.152) and Ibn Asaakir, as quoted in *Kanzul Ummaal* (Vol.3 Pg.341).

(3) Bayhaqi (Vol.9 Pg.152) as well as Abu Dawood, as quoted in *Mishkaat* (Pg.332)

two Rakaahs salaah. He then asked, "Do you people know anything about your rider?" "No," replied the Sahabah رضي الله عنهم, "We know nothing of him."

The Iqaamah was then called out and as Rasulullaah ﷺ led the salaah, he kept glancing towards the ravine. When Rasulullaah ﷺ completed the salaah and had made the Salaam, he said, "Listen to the glad tidings that your rider has arrived." When the Sahabah رضي الله عنهم looked between the trees of the ravine, they saw him come. He stopped before Rasulullaah ﷺ, greeted with Salaam and said, "I went up to the highest point of the ravine as Rasulullaah ﷺ had instructed me. In the morning I studied both walls of the ravine but saw no one." Rasulullaah ﷺ asked, "Did you dismount during the night?" "No," replied Hadhrat Anas bin Abi Marthad رضي الله عنه, "except for salaah and to relieve myself." Rasulullaah ﷺ commented, "You have made it (Jannah) compulsory for yourself. (Your rewards are so great that) It matters not if you do no (Nafil) deeds after this." (1)

### Another Sahabi رضي الله عنه Stands Guard

Hadhrat Abu Atiyya رضي الله عنه reports that Rasulullaah ﷺ was once sitting when he was informed that a man had passed away. Rasulullaah ﷺ asked, "Has any of you seen him do any good deed?" "Yes," replied another Sahabi رضي الله عنه, "I once stood guard with him in the path of Allaah." Rasulullaah ﷺ and those with him stood up and Rasulullaah ﷺ led the Janaazah salaah (funeral prayer) for the deceased. When the Sahabi رضي الله عنه was placed in the grave, Rasulullaah ﷺ threw some sand with his hands and then said, "Although your companions think that you are amongst the inmates of Jahannam, I testify that you are from amongst the inhabitants of Jannah." Addressing Hadhrat Umar bin Khattaab رضي الله عنه, Rasulullaah ﷺ then said, "Do not ask about the (evil) actions of people, but rather enquire about their (good deeds which are acts of) **Islam.**"(2)

Hadhrat Abu Atiyya رضي الله عنه narrates that when a person passed away during the time of Rasulullaah ﷺ, some of the Sahabah رضي الله عنهم said, "O Rasulullaah ﷺ! Do not lead the Janaazah salaah for him." Rasulullaah ﷺ then asked, "Has anyone seen him (do any good deed)." The Hadith continues further. (3)

Another narration from Hadhrat Abu Aa'idh رضي الله عنه states that Rasulullaah ﷺ once left for the Janaazah of a Sahabi رضي الله عنه. When the deceased was placed (before Rasulullaah ﷺ), Hadhrat Umar bin Khattaab رضي الله عنه said, "Do not lead the Janaazah salaah for him, O Rasulullaah ﷺ, because he was a sinful man." Rasulullaah ﷺ then turned to the other Sahabah رضي الله عنهم and asked, "Has anyone seen him (do any good deed)." The Hadith continues further like the one quoted above. (4)

(1) Abu Dawood and Bayhaqi (Vol.9 Pg.149). Abu Nu'aym has also reported the narration, as quoted in Muntakhab (Vol.5 Pg.143).

(2) Tabraani. Haythami (Vol.5 Pg.288) has commented on the chain of narrators.

(3) Ibn Asaakir, as quoted in *Kanzul Ummaal* (Vol.2 Pg.291).

(4) Bayhaqi in *Shu'abul Imaan*, as quoted in *Mishkaat* Pg. 328.

## Hadhrat Abu Rayhaana رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ, Hadhrat Ammaar رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ and Hadhrat Abbaad رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ stand guard

The Hadith of Hadhrat Abu Rayhaana رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ has passed in the chapter entitled "Enduring Extreme Cold when Inviting People Towards Allaah" (1) In the narration, he states, "Rasulullaah ﷺ announced, 'Who will stand guard over us tonight? I shall make such a du'aa for him, the virtues of which he will certainly receive.' A man from the Ansaar stood up and volunteered. When Rasulullaah ﷺ asked who he was, he gave his name. Rasulullaah ﷺ asked him to come closer and when he did, Rasulullaah ﷺ held a part of his clothing and started making du'aa for him. When I heard the du'aa, I also volunteered. Rasulullaah ﷺ asked me who I was and I informed him that I was Abu Rayhaana. Rasulullaah ﷺ then made a du'aa for me that was shorter than the one he made for the other person. Thereafter, Rasulullaah ﷺ said, 'The fire of Jahannam has been forbidden for the eye that stands guard in the path of Allaah.'" (2)

In the chapter entitled "Performing Salaah While Out in the path of Allaah" (3), the narration is reported by Hadhrat Jaabir رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ in which it is mentioned that Rasulullaah ﷺ asked, "Who shall stand guard over us tonight?" A volunteer from amongst the Muhaajireen and another from amongst the Ansaar stood up and said, "We shall do so, O Rasulullaah ﷺ!" Rasulullaah ﷺ gave them instructions to stand guard at the mouth of the valley. The two volunteers were Hadhrat Ammaar bin Yaasir رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ and Hadhrat Abbaad bin Bishr رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ. The Hadith continues further as already narrated. (4)

## Enduring Illness while in Jihaad in the path of Allaah

### The Story of Hadhrat Ubay bin Ka'b رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ and His Du'aa to be able to Endure Fever

Hadhrat Abu Sa'eed Khudri رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ narrates that Rasulullaah ﷺ said, "Whenever a Mu'min is hurt on his body, Allaah uses it as a means to annul some of his sins." Hadhrat Ubay bin Ka'b رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ then prayed, "O Allaah! I beseech You to allow a fever to inflict the body of Ubay bin Ka'b until the day he meets you (until I die). However, it should not prevent him from salaah, fasting, Hajj, Umrah or Jihaad in Your path." A fever then overcame him where he stood and did not leave him until he passed away. Even while suffering the fever, he was always present for salaah, observed his fasts, performed Hajj and Umrah and participated in military expeditions. (5)

Hadhrat Abu Sa'eed Khudri رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ narrates that a person came to Rasulullaah

(1) Under the subheading "The Sahabah رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُمْ Dig the Trench in Extreme Cold".

(2) Ahmad, Nasa'ee, Tabraani and Bayhaqi.

(3) Under the subheading "The Salaah of Hadhrat Abbaad bin Bishr رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ In the Path of Allaah".

(4) Ibn Is'haaq.

(5) Ibn Asaakir.

ﷺ and asked, "Tell me what we receive in exchange for these illnesses that keep afflicting us?" Rasulullaah ﷺ replied, "They annul sins." He Ubay ﷺ asked, "Even if it is something mild?" Rasulullaah ﷺ said, "Even if it be a prick of a thorn or something milder." It was then that Hadhrat Ubay ﷺ prayed to Allaah that fever should never leave him until his death but should not prevent him from Hajj, Umrah, Jihaad in the path of Allaah or salaah in congregation. Whenever someone touched him, the heat of the fever could be felt. This continued until the day he passed away. (1)

## Enduring Injuries while in Jihaad in the path of Allaah

### The Injuries that Rasulullaah ﷺ Suffered

Hadhrt Jundub bin Sufyaan ﷺ reports that as Rasulullaah ﷺ was walking, his foot struck a stone and he fell. This caused his finger to start bleeding. Rasulullaah ﷺ then said:

You are merely a finger that is bleeding

But whatever you suffer is in the path of Allaah

The Hadith of Hadhrt Anas ﷺ has already passed in the chapter entitled "Rasulullaah ﷺ Endures Hardship and Difficulty when Giving Da'wah towards Allaah" (2). There he narrates that the canine teeth of Rasulullaah ﷺ were broken during the Battle of Uhud and he was also severely injured on the head. The Hadith is narrated by Bukhari, Muslim and others.

### The Injuries Sustained by Hadhrt Talha bin Ubaydillah ﷺ and Hadhrt Abdur Rahman bin Auf ﷺ

The Hadith has also passed (3) in which Hadhrt Aa'isha ﷺ narrates that whenever Hadhrt Abu Bakr ﷺ spoke about the Battle of Uhud, he would say, "Every credit for that day goes to Talha." Later on in the narration, Hadhrt Abu Bakr ﷺ says further, "When we reached Rasulullaah ﷺ, his canine tooth was already broken and his face was injured when two links of his helmet pierced his cheeks. Rasulullaah ﷺ said, 'See to your companion!' Rasulullaah ﷺ was referring to Talha who had become weak due to loss of blood. Later on in the Hadith, Hadhrt Abu Bakr ﷺ continues, "After tending to Rasulullaah ﷺ, we went to Talha who had fallen into a ditch. He had suffered seventy odd

(1) Ibn Asaakir, Ahmad and Abu Ya'la, as quoted in *Kanzul Ummaal* (Vol.2 Pg.153). The author of *Isaaba* (Vol.1 Pg.20) states that the narration is also reported by Ahmad, Abu Ya'la, Ibn Abi Dunya, Ibn Hibbaan and Tabraani. Another narration of Ibn Asaakir appears in *Kanzul Ummaal* (Vol.7 Pg.2). Abu Nu'aym has also reported the narration from Hadhrt Ubay bin Ka'b ﷺ in his *Hilya* (Vol.1 Pg.255).

(2) Under the subheading "The Hardship Rasulullaah ﷺ Bore During the Battle of Uhud".

(3) Under the heading "Rasulullaah ﷺ Endures Hardship and Difficulty when Giving Da'wah towards Allaah" and the subheading "The Hardship Rasulullaah ﷺ Bore During the Battle of Uhud".

wounds inflicted by spears, arrows and swords. We then nursed him." (1)

Hadhrat Ibraheem bin Sa'd says that the report reached him that during the Battle of Uhud, Hadhrat Abdur Rahmaan bin Auf رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ sustained twenty one wounds. An injury to his leg caused him to limp. (2)

### The Injury of Hadhrat Anas bin Nadhr رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ

Hadhrat Anas bin Maalik رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ says that his paternal uncle, Hadhrat Anas bin Nadhar رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ bitterly regretted his inability to participate in the battle of Badr. He addressed Rasulullaah ﷺ saying, "I was unable to participate in the first opportunity to fight the Mushrikeen. If Allaah affords Muslim the opportunity to fight them, I shall (show my mettle and) Allaah will see what I can do."

Consequently, he participated in the battle of Uhud. When the Muslims suffered a reversal in the battle, he supplicated to Allaah saying, "O Allaah! I apologise for what they (the Mu'mineen) have done and I absolve myself from what they (the Kuffaar) have done." Saying this, he advanced into the enemy lines. He passed by Hadhrat Sa'd bin Mu'aadh رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ and said, "O Sa'd! I swear by the Rabb of (my father) Nadhar that I can smell the fragrance of Jannah coming from the direction of Uhud." Hadhrat Sa'd رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ later said, "O Rasulullaah ﷺ! I would never have been able to do what he did."

Hadhrat Anas bin Maalik رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ reports that there were more than eighty sword, spear and arrow wounds on his body. When his corpse was found, it was badly mutilated and it was only his sister who could recognise his body and that too by his fingertips. Hadhrat Anas bin Maalik رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ says that they all believed that it was with reference to people like his uncle that Allaah revealed the verse:

﴿مِنَ الْمُؤْمِنِينَ رِجَالٌ صَدَقُوا مَا عَاهَدُوا اللَّهَ عَلَيْهِ فَمِنْهُمْ مَّنْ قَضَىٰ نَحْبَهُ وَمِنْهُمْ مَّنْ يَنْتَظِرُ وَمَا بَدَّلُوا تَبْدِيلًا﴾ (سورة الاحزاب: ٢٣)

Among the Mu'mineen there are men who are true to the pledge they vow to Allaah (*that they will fight in Jihaad until they die*). Of them is he who has fulfilled his pledge (*and has been martyred*), and he who is waiting (*to be martyred*). They have not changed (*their resolve*) in the least (*unlike the Munaafiqeen*). {Surah Ahzaab, verse 23} (3)

Hadhrat Anas bin Maalik رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ narrates, "My paternal uncle after whom I was named did not participate in the Battle of Badr at the side of Rasulullaah ﷺ. This was difficult for him to come to terms with and he would say, 'I missed the first battle that Rasulullaah ﷺ fought. If Allaah affords me the opportunity to participate in another battle with Rasulullaah ﷺ, Allaah shall certainly see what I can do.' He was afraid to say more than this. He then participated in the Battle of Uhud with Rasulullaah ﷺ. There he passed by Sa'd bin Mu'aadh رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ and said to him, 'Where are you off to, O Abu Amr? How wonderful is the

(1) Tayaalisi, as quoted in *Al Bidaaya wan Nihaaya* (Vol.4 Pg.29).

(2) Abu Nu'aym, as quoted in *Muntakhab* (Vol.5 Pg.77).

(3) Bukhari, Muslim and Nasa'ee, as quoted in *Targeeb wat Tarheeb* (Vol.2 Pg.436). Ahmad and Tirmidhi have also reported the narration.

fragrance of Jannah that I smell coming from behind Mount Uhud!' He then fought until he was martyred. Over eighty sword, spear and arrow wounds were found on his body. His sister and my paternal aunt Rubayyi bint Nadhar said that she recognised his body only by his fingertips. It was then that Allaah revealed the following verse of the Qur'aan:

﴿مِنَ الْمُؤْمِنِينَ رِجَالٌ صَدَقُوا مَا عَاهَدُوا اللَّهَ عَلَيْهِ فَمِنْهُمْ مَّنْ قَضَىٰ نَحْبَهُ وَمِنْهُمْ مَّنْ يَنْتَظِرُ وَمَا بَدَّلُوا تَبْدِيلًا﴾ (سورة الاحزاب: ٢٣)

Among the Mu'mineen there are men who are true to the pledge they vow to Allaah (that they will fight in Jihaad until they die). Of them is he who has fulfilled his pledge (and has been martyred), and he who is waiting (to be martyred). They have not changed (their resolve) in the least (unlike the Munaafiqeen). {Surah Ahzaab, verse 23}

The Sahabah رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُمْ were of the opinion that this verse was revealed with reference to people like him." (1)

## The Wounds Sustained by Hadhrat Ja'far bin Abu Taalib رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ

Hadhrt Abdullaah bin Umar رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ narrates, "Rasulullaah ﷺ appointed Hadhrt Zaid bin Haaritha رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ as commander of the expedition to Mu'ta. Rasulullaah ﷺ then added, 'If Zaid is killed, Ja'far should take command and if Ja'far is killed, then Abdullaah bin Rawaaha should take command.' I was with the Muslim army in this battle and when we searched for Ja'far bin Abu Taalib, we found him already dead. We counted over ninety sword and arrow wounds on his body." Another narration adds that not a single wound was on the back of his body (indicating that he advanced all the time and never turned his back to the enemy). (2)

## The Wounds Sustained by Hadhrt Sa'd bin Mu'aadh رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ

Hadhrt Amr bin Shurahbeel رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ reports that when Hadhrt Sa'd bin Mu'aadh رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ was struck with an arrow during the Battle of Khandaq, his blood spilled on Rasulullaah ﷺ. Hadhrt Abu Bakr رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ arrived and (seeing the condition of Hadhrt Sa'd رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ) said, "Oh, my back has been broken!" (This was an expression of shock.) After Rasulullaah ﷺ bade him to be silent, Hadhrt Umar رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ arrived and exclaimed, "Innaa Lillaahi wa innaa Ilayhi Raaji'oon!" (3)

(1) Ahmad, Tirmidhi and Nasa'ee, as quoted in *Al Bidaaya wan Nihaaya* (Vol.4 Pg.32). Tayaalisi, Ibn Sa'd, Ibn Abi Shayba, Haarith, Ibn Jareer, Ibn Mundhir, Ibn Abi Hattim and Ibn Mardway have also reported the narration, as quoted in *Kanzul Ummaal* (Vol.7 Pg.15). Abu Nu'aym in his *Hilya* (Vol.1 Pg.121) and Bayhaqi (Vol.9 Pg.44) have reported it as well.

(2) Bukhari, as quoted in *Al Bidaaya wan Nihaaya* (Vol.4 Pg.245) and Tabraani, as quoted in *Isaaba* (Vol.1 Pg.238). Abu Nu'aym in *Hilya* (Vol.1 Pg.117) and Ibn Sa'd (Vol.4 Pg.26) have also reported the narration.

(3) Ibn Abi Shayba, as quoted in *Kanzul Ummaal* (Vol.8 Pg.122).

## The Eye of Hadhrat Abu Sufyaan رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ is Injured During the Battle at Taa'if

Hadhrt Sa'eed bin Ubayd Thaqaafi رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ reports, "During the battle at Taa'if, I spotted Abu Sufyaan bin Harb رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ sitting and eating on the wall of Abu Ya'la. I shot an arrow at him, which struck his eye. He then went to Rasulullaah ﷺ and said, 'This eye of mine has been injured in the path of Allaah.' Rasulullaah ﷺ said to him, 'If you wish, I could pray to Allaah to return the eye to you. If you wish otherwise, you could have Jannah (in return for your injury).' Abu Sufyaan رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ replied, 'Let it be Jannah instead.'" (1)

## The Wounds Sustained to the Eyes of Hadhrt Qataadah bin Nu'maan رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ and Hadhrt Rifaa'ah bin Raafi رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ During the Battle of Badr

Hadhrt Qataadah bin Nu'maan رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ narrates that when his eye was injured during the Battle of Badr, his eyeball hung on his cheek and the Sahabah رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُمْ wanted to cut it off. The rest of the Hadith will be quoted in the chapter concerning the manner in which the Sahabah رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُمْ received assistance. (2)

Hadhrt Rifaa'ah bin Raafi رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ says, "The Mushrikeen amassed around Umayyah bin Khalaf during the Battle of Badr as we approached him. When I noticed that a portion of his armour was broken below his armpit, I struck the area with my sword. I was also struck by an arrow during the Battle of Badr because of which my eye was ruptured. Rasulullaah ﷺ applied some of his saliva to the eye and prayed for me. I then experienced absolutely no pain." (3)

## The Incident of Hadhrt Raafi bin Khadeej رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ and two other Sahabah رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُمْ from the Banu Abdul Ash'hal Tribe

The incident reported by Hadhrt Yahya bin Abdul Hameed has already passed<sup>(4)</sup> in which he narrates from his grandfather that an arrow struck Hadhrt Raafi bin Khadeej رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ in the chest during either the Battle of Uhud or the Battle of Hunayn<sup>(5)</sup>. He then went to Rasulullaah ﷺ and asked him to remove the arrow. In the same chapter entitled "Enduring Injuries and Illness when Inviting People Towards Allaah", another narration from Hadhrt Abu Saa'ib t<sup>(6)</sup> states that a man from the Banu Abdul Ash'hal tribe reported, "My brother and I participated in the Battle of Uhud and we both returned wounded. When

(1) Ibn Asaakir, as quoted in *Kanzul Ummaal* (Vol.5 Pg.307). Zubayr bin Bakkaar has also reported a similar narration, as quoted in *Kanzul Ummaal* (Vol.2 Pg.178).

(2) Baghawi and Abu Ya'la.

(3) Bazaar and Tabraani. Haythami (Vol.6 Pg.82) has commented on the chain of narrators.

(4) In the chapter entitled "Enduring Injuries and Illness when Inviting People Towards Allaah", under the subheading "The Story of Hadhrt Raafi bin Khadeej t".

(5) One of narrators Amr bin Marzooq is unsure which battle it was.

(6) Appearing under the subheading "The Incident of Two Men from the Banu Abdul Ash'hal Tribe During the Battle of Uhud".

Rasulullaah ﷺ's caller announced that we should march in pursuit of the enemy, I said to my brother or he said to me, 'Can we miss this opportunity to march with Rasulullaah ﷺ?' By Allaah! Although we had no transport to ride and we were both heavily wounded, we went with Rasulullaah ﷺ. **Since my wounds were less serious than my brother's,** I carried him when he could not manage and he walked at other times. In this manner, we eventually reached the place where the other Muslims were."

## The Wounds Sustained by Hadhrat Baraa bin Maalik رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ and How he Lost the Flesh on his Bones

Hadhrt Anas رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ reports that during the battle against Musaylama (Kadhaab), Hadhrt Baraa رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ threw himself on to the people in the orchard (the defenders of Musaylama locked themselves in an orchard. Hadhrt Baraa رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ scaled the wall of the orchard to get in and) He then fought them (single-handedly) until he was able to open the gate of the orchard. Hadhrt Baraa رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ sustained over eighty arrow and sword wounds and had to be carried away to the camp for treatment. Hadhrt Khaalid رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ stayed with him (and nursed him) for a month. (1)

Hadhrt Is'haaq bin Abdullaah bin Abu Talha رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ narrates that Hadhrt Anas رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ and his brother were (fighting) at an enemy fortress in Hareeq, a place in Iraq. The Kuffaar were throwing hooks fixed to heated chains and when it caught hold of someone, they would pull him up to them (in the fortress). They managed to get hold of Hadhrt Anas رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ in this manner (and were pulling him in). However, Hadhrt Baraa رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ advanced, kept watch at the wall (for an opportunity) and then grabbed at the chain. **He kept holding on to the (burning hot) chain until the rope gave way. When he then looked at his hand, the bone was visible because all the flesh on it had burnt away.** In this way, Allaah had saved Hadhrt Anas bin Maalik رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ. (2)

Another narration states that the hooks caught Hadhrt Anas bin Maalik رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ and the Kuffaar started pulling at him until he was lifted off the ground. While his brother Hadhrt Baraa رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ was fighting the enemy, he was told to catch hold of his brother. He came running, jumped on to the wall and grabbed the chain as it kept turning. He then kept tugging the chain from the Kuffaar with his hands burning until the rope finally gave way. Thereafter when he looked at his hands and saw that the bone was visible because all the flesh on it had burnt away. (3)

## The Desire for Martyrdom and Praying for it Rasulullaah ﷺ Wishes to be Killed in the path of Allaah

Hadhrt Abu Hurayra رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ reports that he heard Rasulullaah ﷺ say, "I swear

(1) Khalifah and Baqi bin Makhlad, as quoted in *Isaaba* (Vol.1 Pg.143).

(2) Tabraani, as quoted in *Isaaba* (Vol.1 Pg.143).

(3) Tabraani, as quoted in *Majma'uz Zawaa'id* (Vol.9 Pg.325).

by the Being Who controls my life! I would not have missed a single expedition in the path of Allaah if it were not for many men who would dislike staying behind me and for whom I am unable to provide transport. I swear by the Being Who controls my life! **I wish that I was killed in the path of Allaah and then given life again, then again killed and again given life, again killed and given life once more and then killed.**" (1)

Hadhrat Abu Hurayra رضي الله عنه narrates that Rasulullaah صلى الله عليه وسلم said, "Allaah stands surety for the person who goes out in the path of Allaah. (Allaah says) For the person who leaves home for no other reason but to strive in My path with belief in Me and belief in My Ambiyaa, I stand guarantee to either enter him into Jannah (if he is martyred) or (if he survives) to return him to his family together with great rewards or a share of the booty. I swear by the Being Who controls the life of Muhammad! Every wound sustained in the path of Allaah shall appear on the Day of Qiyaamah as (fresh as) it was the day it took place. While the colour shall be that of blood, the smell will be the fragrance of musk. I swear by the Being Who controls the life of Muhammad! Had it not been for the difficulty it would cause to the Muslims, I would not have missed a single expedition marching in the path of Allaah. However, neither can I provide nor do they have the necessary means of transport (to proceed in the path of Allaah) and (without transport) they will find it most distressing to stay behind me. I swear by the Being Who controls the life of Muhammad! I wish that I was killed in the path of Allaah and then given life again, then again killed and again given life, again killed and given life once more." (2)

### Hadhrat Umar رضي الله عنه Wishes for Martyrdom

Hadhrat Qais bin Abi Haazim narrates that Hadhrat Umar رضي الله عنه once delivered a sermon in which he said, "There is a palace in the everlasting Jannah that has five hundred doors. At each door there are five thousand wide-eyed damsels. None but a Nabi can enter it." He then turned to the grave of Rasulullaah صلى الله عليه وسلم and said, "All the best to you, O occupant of this grave." Thereafter, he continued, "Or a Siddeeq (may enter it)." He then turned to the grave of Hadhrat Abu Bakr رضي الله عنه and said, "All the best to you, O Abu Bakr." Then he continued saying, "Or a martyr (may enter it)." He then turned to himself saying, "How will you ever attain martyrdom, O Umar?" He then added, "The same Allaah Who took me out of Makkah to migrate to Madinah has the power to pull martyrdom to me." (3) Hadhrat Abdullaah bin Mas'ood رضي الله عنه says, "Allaah then gave martyrdom to him at the hands of the worst of creation who was a slave of Mughiera رضي الله عنه." (4) Hadhrat Aslam narrates that Hadhrat Umar رضي الله عنه used to make the following du'aa: "O Allaah! Bless me with martyrdom in Your path and make my death in

(1) Bukhari.

(2) Muslim (Vol.2 Pg.133). Ahmad and Nasa'ee have also reported the narration, as quoted in *Kanzul Ummaal* (Vol.2 Pg.255).

(3) Tabraani and Ibn Asaakir, as quoted in *Kanzul Ummaal* (Vol.7 Pg.275).

(4) Tabraani, as quoted in *Majma'uz Zawaa'id* (Vol.9 Pg.55) where Haythami has commented on the chain of narrators.

the city of Your Rasool ﷺ." (1) Another narration from Hadhrat Hafsa ﷺ states that Hadhrat Umar ﷺ prayed, "O Allaah! Let me be killed in Your path and have my death in the city of Your Nabi ﷺ." When Hadhrat Hafsa ﷺ asked him how this was possible, he replied, "Allaah shall make it happen when He wills." (2)

## Hadhrat Abdullaah bin Jahash ﷺ Wishes for Martyrdom

Hadhrt Sa'd bin Abi Waqqaas ﷺ says that on the day that he Battle of Uhud was to take place, Hadhrt Abdullaah bin Jahash ﷺ said to him, "Will you not make du'aa to Allaah?" The two men then stepped aside and Hadhrt Sa'd ﷺ prayed, "O my Rabb! When we meet the enemy, let me clash with an excellent fighter and fierce warrior. Let me engage him in fierce combat and let him also fight aggressively. Thereafter, allow me to gain the upper hand over him, kill him and have his possessions as booty." Hadhrt Abdullaah bin Jahash ﷺ said "Aameen" to the du'aa.

Thereafter, Hadhrt Abdullaah bin Jahash ﷺ prayed, "O Allaah! Allow me to meet in combat a man who is a fierce warrior and an excellent fighter. Let me fight him for You and let him also fight back. Let him then kill me and sever my nose and my ears and then when I meet You tomorrow You may ask, 'Who has severed your nose and ears?' I may then reply, 'It was done for Your pleasure and the pleasure of Your Rasool ﷺ.' You may then confirm by saying, 'You have spoken the truth.'"

(Narrating the account) Hadhrt Sa'd ﷺ said, "O my son! The du'aa of Abdullaah bin Jahash ﷺ was better than mine. By the end of the day, I saw his nose and ears strung in a thread." (3)

Hadhrt Sa'eed bin Musayyib ﷺ narrates that Hadhrt Abdullaah bin Jahash ﷺ said, "O Allaah! I beseech You on oath that I should meet an enemy tomorrow who should kill me, tear my belly open and then sever my nose and my ears. You should then ask me (on the Day of Qiyaamah) why this has happened so that I may reply, 'It was for You.'" Hadhrt Sa'eed bin Musayyib ﷺ says, "I have strong hope that just as Allaah fulfilled the first part of his entreaty, Allaah will also fulfil the last part." (4)

## Hadhrt Baraa bin Maalik ﷺ Hopes for Martyrdom

Hadhrt Anas ﷺ reports that Rasulullaah ﷺ said, "There are many people

(1) Bukhari.

(2) Ismaa'eeli, as quoted in *Fat'hul Baari* (Vol.4 Pg.71).

(3) Tabraani, narrating from reliable sources as confirmed by Haythami (Vol.9 Pg.301). The narration is also reported by Baghawi as quoted in *Isaaba* (Vol.2 Pg.278), by Ibn Wahab as quoted in *Isti'aab* (Vol.2 Pg.274) and by Bayhaqi (Vol.6 Pg.207). Abu Nu'aym in *Hilya* (Vol.1 Pg.109) has also reported the narration without the du'aa of Hadhrt Sa'd ﷺ. He suffices with the du'aa of Hadhrt Abdullaah bin Jahash ﷺ only.

(4) Haakim (Vol.3 Pg.200) with commentary on the chain of narrators. Ibn Shaaheen and Ibn Mubaarak in his *Jihaad* have also reported the narration, as quoted in *Isaaba* (Vol.2 Pg.287). Abu Nu'aym in *Hilya* (Vol.1 Pg.109) and Ibn Sa'd (Vol.3 Pg.63) have also reported the narration.

wearing two old pieces of cloth and who are not given any attention but Allaah will certainly fulfil their vows if they make any. Amongst them is Baraa bin Maalik." When the Battle for Tustar was raging and the Muslims were suffering a reverse, they said, "O Baraa! Make a vow to your Rabb (so that we could win the battle)." He then prayed, "(O Allaah! I swear in Your name that) You should give us the shoulders of the enemy in our hands and allow me to meet with Your Nabi ﷺ." He was then martyred. (1)

Hadhrat Anas رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ narrates that Rasulullaah ﷺ said, "There are many weak people whom others regard as weak and who wear two old pieces of cloth. However, Allaah will certainly fulfil their vows if they make any in His name. Amongst them is Baraa bin Maalik." Hadhrat Baraa رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ once clashed with a Mushrikeen army who had inflicted heavy casualties to the Muslims. The Muslims therefore called to him saying, "O Baraa! Rasulullaah ﷺ had mentioned that Allaah would certainly fulfil the vows you make. Therefore make a vow to your Rabb." Hadhrat Baraa رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ then said, "O my Rabb! I make a vow in Your name that You should give us their shoulders." (Allaah then gave the Muslims victory.)

Thereafter the Muslims clashed with an enemy at the bridge of the town Sus where the Mushrikeen again inflicted heavy casualties to the Muslims. Again the Muslims called to Hadhrat Baraa رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ to make a vow to Allaah. Consequently, Hadhrat Baraa رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ prayed, O Allaah! I make a vow in Your name that You should give us the shoulders of the enemy in our hands and allow me to meet with Your Nabi ﷺ." The Muslims were then given victory and Hadhrat Baraa رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ was martyred. (2)

### Hadhrat Humama رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ Hopes for Martyrdom

Hadhrat Humayd bin Abdur Rahmaan Himyari narrates that a Sahabi by the name of Hadhrat Humama رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ once fought a battle in Isfahan during the Khilaafah of Hadhrat Umar رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ when he prayed thus: "O Allaah! Humama claims that he loves to meet You. O Allaah, if he is true, grant him the resolve (to search for martyrdom) and if he is false, then give him death in Your path even though he dislikes it." The remainder of the Hadith states that he was finally martyred and that Hadhrat Abu Moosa Ash'ari رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ also testified that he was a true martyr. (3) A narration of Imaam Ahmad adds that Hadhrat Humama رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ also said, "Give Humama death in Your path even though he dislikes it. O Allaah! Let Humama not return home from this journey. He passed away on the journey. One of the narrators called Affaan once said that Hadhrat Humama رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ was afflicted with a stomach disease because of which he passed away in Isfahan. (After his death) Hadhrat Abu Moosa Ash'ari رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ said, "O people! By Allaah as far as we

(1) Abu Nu'aym, as quoted in *Kanzul Ummaal* (Vol.7 Pg.11) and Tirmidhi, as quoted in *Isaaba* (Vol.1 Pg.144).

(2) Haakim (Vol.3 Pg.292), narrating from reliable sources as confirmed by Dhahabi, Abu Nu'aym in *Hilya* (Vol.1 Pg.7) has also reported the narration.

(3) Abu Dawood, Musaddad, Haarith, Ibn Abi Shaybah and Ibn Mubaarak, as quoted in *Isaaba* (Vol.1 Pg.355).

have heard from our Nabi ﷺ and as far as our knowledge reaches, Humama رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ passed away as a martyr." (1)

## Hadhrat Nu'maan bin Muqarrin رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ Hopes for Martyrdom

Hadhrat Ma'qal bin Yasaar رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ reports that Hadhrat Umar رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ once consulted with the Hurmuzaan (a Persian leader who accepted Islaam after being defeated by the Muslims). Hadhrat Umar رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ asked, "What are your opinions? Should we start with Faaris, Azerbaijan or Isfahan?" Hurmuzaan replied, "Faaris and Azerbaijan are wings while Isfahan is the head. If you cut one wing, the other wing will take over but if you cut the head, both wings will become useless. Start with the head." Hadhrat Umar رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ then entered the Masjid where he found Hadhrat Nu'maan bin Muqarrin رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ performing salaah. Hadhrat Umar رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ sat beside Hadhrat Nu'maan رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ and when he had completed his salaah, Hadhrat Umar رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ said, "I wish to appoint you as commander." Hadhrat Nu'maan رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ said, "Not as a collector but as a warrior." "As a warrior indeed," confirmed Hadhrat Umar رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ. Hadhrat Umar رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ then sent him to Isfahan.

In the remainder of the Hadith, it is reported that Hadhrat Mughiera رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ said to Hadhrat Nu'maan رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ, "May Allaah have mercy on you! Launch the attack because we are being pressed (the arrows of the enemy are coming fast and furious)." Hadhrat Nu'maan رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ replied, "You are undoubtedly a man of many virtues. However, I have fought with Rasulullaah ﷺ and whenever he did not launch an attack at the beginning of the day, he would postpone it for the time when the sun had passed the meridian, when the wind started to blow and Allaah's help would descend."

Thereafter, Hadhrat Nu'maan رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ said, "I shall wave my flag thrice. When I wave it the first time, every man should attend to the call of nature and then perform wudhu. When I wave it the second time, every man should check his weapons and shoe straps and fix them. Then when I wave it for the third time, you should attack and should not turn your attention to each other. If Nu'maan is killed, none should turn their attention to him either for I am to make a du'aa to Allaah which I stress that every person say Aameen to. (He then made the du'aa saying) O Allaah! Grant Nu'maan martyrdom today with your assistance to the Muslims and make them victorious."

Hadhrat Nu'maan رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ then waved his flag the first time, followed by the second and then the third. He then wore his armour and launched the attack. He was the first to fall in battle. Hadhrat Ma'qal رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ reports, "I went up to Hadhrat Nu'maan رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ but then recalled his instruction. I therefore marked the spot and proceeded. Whenever we killed an enemy soldier, his companions immediately became oblivious of us (to tend to him). (The Persian leader) Dhul Haajibayn fell from his mule, causing his abdomen to cut open. Allaah then

(1) Ahmad. Haythami (Vol.9 Pg.400) has commented on the chain of narrators. Abu Nu'aym has also reported the narration, as quoted in *Muntakhab* (Vol.5 Pg.170).

granted us victory. I then went to Hadhrat Nu'maan رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ with a container of water. As I washed the sand from his face, he asked who I was. When I informed him that I was Ma'qal bin Yasaar, he asked, 'What has happened to the Muslims?' 'Allaah has given them victory,' I replied. He then said, 'All praise to Allaah! Write to Hadhrat Umar رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ informing him of this.' It was then that his soul departed." (1)

Hadhrt Jubayr رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ has narrated the Battle of Nahaawind in detail. In his narration he quotes (the following words of Hadhrt Nu'maan رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ), "Whenever Rasulullaah ﷺ fought a battle and did not launch an attack at the beginning of the day, he did not rush until the time of (Zuhr) salaah had arrived, the winds started to blow and the battle could take place in a pleasant manner. It was this practice of Rasulullaah ﷺ that prevented me from attacking. (He then prayed) O Allaah! Bring comfort to my eyes today by granting such a victory to the Muslims that gives honour to Islaam and disgrace to the Kuffaar. Thereafter, grant me death as a martyr." He then address the Muslims saying, "Say 'Aameen', may Allaah bless you." The others then said "Aameen" and started to weep. (2)

## **The Enthusiasm of the Sahabah رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُمْ to Die and Give their Lives in the path of Allaah During the Battle of Badr**

### **The Incident of Hadhrt Khaythama رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ and his son**

Hadhrt Sulaymaan bin Bilaal narrates that as Rasulullaah ﷺ was leaving for the Battle of Badr, Hadhrt Sa'd bin Khaythama رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ and his father Hadhrt Khaytama رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ both decided to leave with Rasulullaah ﷺ. When Rasulullaah ﷺ heard about this, he instructed that only one of them should leave and (to decide who it would be) that they draw lots. It was then that Hadhrt Khaytama رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ said to his son Sa'd رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ, "One of us will have to remain behind. Why don't you stay with the women?" Hadhrt Sa'd رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ replied, "Had it not been to attain Jannah, I would have certainly given you preference (to have it your way). However, I really do aspire for martyrdom on this trip." When they drew lots, Hadhrt Sa'd رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ's name was drawn. He therefore left for Badr with Rasulullaah ﷺ where he was martyred by Amr bin Abd Wadd. (3)

### **The Martyrdom of Hadhrt Ubaydah bin Haarith**

رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ

Hadhrt Muhammad bin Ali bin Husayn narrates that when Utba called for challengers during the Battle of Badr, Hadhrt Ali bin Abi Taalib رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ stood up

(1) Tabari (Vol.4 Pg.249).

(2) Tabari (Vol.4 Pg.235). Tabraani has also reported the narration of Hadhrt Ma'qal bin Yasaar رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ. Haythami (Vol.6 Pg.217) has commented on the chain of narrators. Haakim (Vol.3 Pg.293) has also reported the narration of Hadhrt Ma'qal رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ in detail.

(3) Haakim (Vol.3 Pg.189). Ibn Mubaarak has also reported the narration, as quoted in *Isaaba* (Vol.2 Pg.25).

to challenge Waleed bin Utba. The two were young and of equal physique. By turning the palm of his hand and placing it on the ground, the narrator indicated that Hadhrat Ali رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ floored Waleed and killed him. Thereafter, Shayba bin Rabee'ah stood up and Hadhrat Hamza رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ got up to accept the challenge. These two men were also of equal build. Raising his hands even higher, the narrator indicated in a like manner that Hadhrat Hamza رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ killed Shayba. Thereafter, when Utba stood up, Hadhrat Ubaydah bin Haarith رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ got up to accept his challenge. The narrator pointed to two pillars and added that the two men were like those pillars. When the two men exchanged blows, the blow of Hadhrat Ubaydah رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ left Utba's left arm dangling. However, Utba got close and struck at Hadhrat Ubaydah رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ's leg with his sword, severing his calf. Hadhrat Ali رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ and Hadhrat Hamza رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ then returned and settled Utba's affair. They then carried Hadhrat Ubaydah رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ away to Rasulullaah صَلَّى اللهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ beneath a canopy. When they made him over to Rasulullaah صَلَّى اللهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ, the Nabi of Allaah صَلَّى اللهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ made him lie down. Rasulullaah صَلَّى اللهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ took his head on his lap and started to wipe the dust from his face when Hadhrat Ubaydah رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ said, "O Rasulullaah صَلَّى اللهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ! Had Abu Taalib seen me now, he would be convinced that his words are more applicable to me than him when he said (with regards to protecting Rasulullaah صَلَّى اللهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ):

وَنُسَلِمُهُ حَتَّى نُصْرَعَ حَوْلَهُ وَنَذْهَلَ عَنْ أَبْنَانِنَا وَآلِحَاتِنَا

*We shall protect him until we are wounded and fall dead around him  
Being totally oblivious of our own children and wives"*

Hadhrot Ubaydah رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ then asked, "Am I not a martyr?" "Certainly," replied Rasulullaah صَلَّى اللهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ, "and I am witness to the fact." He then passed away. Rasulullaah صَلَّى اللهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ buried him in (a valley called) Safraa and himself went into the grave (to lay the body). Rasulullaah صَلَّى اللهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ had never before that entered the grave of any person. (1)

Hadhrot Zuhri narrates that when Hadhrot Ubaydah رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ and Utba exchanged blows, the blow of each one incapacitated the other. Returning to the battlefield, Hadhrot Ali رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ and Hadhrot Hamza رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ approached Utba and killed him. They then carried their companion away. When they came to Rasulullaah صَلَّى اللهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ, Hadhrot Ubaydah رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ's leg was severed and his arteries were bleeding profusely. When the two men brought Hadhrot Ubaydah رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ to Rasulullaah صَلَّى اللهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ, he asked, "Am I not a martyr, O Rasulullaah صَلَّى اللهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ?" "Certainly," came the reply. Hadhrot Ubaydah رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ then said, "Had Abu Taalib been alive, he would be convinced that his words are more applicable to me than him when he said:

وَنُسَلِمُهُ حَتَّى نُصْرَعَ حَوْلَهُ وَنَذْهَلَ عَنْ أَبْنَانِنَا وَآلِحَاتِنَا

*We shall protect him until we are wounded and fall dead around him  
Being totally oblivious of our own children and wives"*

(1) Ibn Asaakir, as quoted in *Kanzul Ummaal* (Vol.5 Pg.272).

## During the Battle of Uhud

The Incident of Hadhrat Umar رَضِيَ اللَّهُ عَنْهُ and his brother Zaid رَضِيَ اللَّهُ عَنْهُ Concerning not Wearing Armour with the Intention of being Martyred

Hadhrat Abdullaah bin Umar رَضِيَ اللَّهُ عَنْهُ narrates that on the day that the Battle of Uhud was fought, Hadhrat Umar رَضِيَ اللَّهُ عَنْهُ said to his brother, "Take my armour, dear brother." His brother replied, "I desire martyrdom just as you do." They both therefore left the armour. (1)

## Hadhrat Ali رَضِيَ اللَّهُ عَنْهُ Resolves to Fight to Death

Hadhrat Sa'eed bin Mansoor reports that Hadhrat Ali رَضِيَ اللَّهُ عَنْهُ said, "Once the people had left Rasulullaah ﷺ during the Battle of Uhud, I looked through all the dead and did not see Rasulullaah ﷺ there. I then said to myself, 'By Allaah! It is impossible for Rasulullaah ﷺ to flee and I do not see him amongst the dead. I think that Allaah has become angry with us because of what we did and had lifted his Nabi ﷺ. It is therefore best for me to fight until I am killed.' I then broke the sheath of my sword and attacked the Mushrikeen. When they gave way, I suddenly saw Rasulullaah ﷺ in their midst." (2)

## The Incident of Hadhrat Anas bin Nadhar رَضِيَ اللَّهُ عَنْهُ

Hadhrat Qaasim bin Abdur Rahmaan bin Raafi رَضِيَ اللَّهُ عَنْهُ who belonged to the Banu Adi bin Najjaar tribe narrates that Hadhrat Anas bin Nadhar رَضِيَ اللَّهُ عَنْهُ the uncle of Hadhrat Anas bin Maalik رَضِيَ اللَّهُ عَنْهُ came across some men from the Muhaajireen and the Ansaar (during the Battle of Uhud) who had lost all morale to fight. Amongst them was Hadhrat Umar bin Khattaab رَضِيَ اللَّهُ عَنْهُ and Hadhrat Talha bin Ubaydillaah رَضِيَ اللَّهُ عَنْهُ. Hadhrat Anas bin Nadhar رَضِيَ اللَّهُ عَنْهُ asked them, "What makes you sit here?" "Rasulullaah ﷺ has been martyred," they replied. He then said to them, "What is the use of living after him? Stand up and die for that which Rasulullaah ﷺ died for!" He then faced the enemy and fought until he was killed. (3)

## The Incident of Hadhrat Thaabit bin Dahdaaha رَضِيَ اللَّهُ عَنْهُ

Hadhrat Abdullaah bin Ammaar Khatmi رَضِيَ اللَّهُ عَنْهُ reports that Hadhrat Thaabit bin Dahdaaha رَضِيَ اللَّهُ عَنْهُ came before the Muslims during the Battle of Uhud when they were all scattered and without morale. He shouted, "O assembly of Ansaar! Come to me! Come to me! I am Thaabit bin Dahdaaha! If Muhammad ﷺ has been killed, remember that Allaah is Living and never dies. Fight for your Deen, Allaah shall give you victory and shall assist you." A group of the Ansaar jumped towards him and Hadhrat Thaabit رَضِيَ اللَّهُ عَنْهُ started attacking the Kuffaar with the Muslims by his side.

A fully armed and powerful battalion stood before them comprising of leading

- (1) Tabraani narrating from reliable sources as confirmed by Haythami (Vol.5 Pg.298). Ibn Sa'd (Vol.3 Pg.275) and Abu Nu'aym in *Hilya* (Vol.1 Pg.367) have also reported the narration.
- (2) Abu Ya'la, Ibn Abi Aasim, Boraqi and Sa'eed bin Mansoor, as quoted in *Kanzul Ummaal* (Vol.5 Pg.274). Haythami (Vol.6 Pg.112) has commented on the chain of narrators.
- (3) Ibn Is'haaq, as quoted in *Al Bidaaya wan Nihaaya* (Vol.4 Pg.34).

commanders such as Khaalid bin Waleed, Amr bin Al Aas, Ikrama bin Abu Jahal and Daraar bin Khattaab. A fierce fight ensued and Khaalid bin Waleed lunged a spear at Hadhrat Thaabit رَضِيَ اللَّهُ عَنْهُ, which went through his body. He then fell as a martyr. All the Ansaar with him also fell as martyrs. They are reputed to be the last Muslims to fall (during that battle). (1)

## The Incident of a Muhaajir and an Ansaari

Hadhrt Abu Najeeh رَضِيَ اللَّهُ عَنْهُ reports that during the Battle of Uhud, a Muhaajir passed by an Ansaari lying in a pool of blood. The Muhaajir said to the Ansaari, "Do you know that Muhammad ﷺ has been martyred?" The Ansaari responded by saying, "If Muhammad ﷺ has been martyred, then (his duty is complete because) he has already passed on the message. You people should continue fighting for your Deen." It was then that Allaah revealed the verse:

﴿وَمَا مُحَمَّدٌ إِلَّا رَسُولٌ ۖ قَدْ خَلَتْ مِنْ قَبْلِهِ الرُّسُلُ ۗ أَفَأَبَيْنَ مَاتَ أَوْ قُتِلَ انْقَلَبْتُمْ عَلَىٰ أَعْقَابِكُمْ ۖ وَمَنْ يَنْقَلِبْ عَلَىٰ عَقْبَيْهِ فَلَنْ يَضُرَّ اللَّهَ شَيْئًا ۗ وَسَجِزَىٰ اللَّهُ الشَّاكِرِينَ﴾

(سورة آل عمران: ١٤٤)

Muhammad ﷺ is but a Rasool (of Allaah). Indeed many Rusul have passed before him. If he passes away or is martyred, would you (Muslims) then turn back on your heels (and forsake Islaam)? He who turns back on his heels can never harm Allaah in the least (because he will be harming only himself). Allaah shall soon reward the grateful ones (so be firm and strive for His Deen). {Surah Aal Imraan, verse 144} (2)

## The Incident of Hadhrt Sa'd bin Rabee رَضِيَ اللَّهُ عَنْهُ

Hadhrt Zaid bin Thaabit رَضِيَ اللَّهُ عَنْهُ narrates, "During the Battle of Uhud, Rasulullaah ﷺ sent me to look for Hadhrt Sa'd bin Rabee رَضِيَ اللَّهُ عَنْهُ. Rasulullaah ﷺ instructed, 'If you see him, convey my Salaams to him and tell him that Rasulullaah ﷺ asks how he is keeping.' I searched for him amongst the dead and found him in his dying moments with seventy wounds inflicted by swords, spears and arrows. I informed him that Rasulullaah ﷺ had sent Salaams and wished to know how he was feeling. He said, 'Salaams to Rasulullaah ﷺ and to you. Tell Rasulullaah ﷺ that I can smell the fragrance of Jannah and tell my Ansaar brothers that they will have no excuse to offer before Allaah if the Kuffaar reach him while they have the power to wink an eye.' He then passed away. May Allaah shower His mercy on him." (3)

Another narration reported by Abdur Rahmaan bin Abu Sa'sa'a states that Rasulullaah ﷺ said, "Who will see what has happened to Sa'd bin Rabee for me?" The rest of the Hadith is similar to the one above. It states also that Hadhrt Sa'd رَضِيَ اللَّهُ عَنْهُ said, "Inform Rasulullaah ﷺ that I am amongst the dead. Also

(1) Waaqidi, as quoted in *Isti'aaab* (Vol.1 Pg.194).

(2) Bayhaqi in *Dalaa'ilun Nubuwwah*, as quoted in *Al Bidaaya wan Nihaaya* (Vol.4 Pg.31).

(3) Haakim (Vol.3 Pg.201) narrating from reliable sources as confirmed by Dhahabi.

convey my Salaams to him and tell him that Sa'd says, 'May Allaah reward you with the best rewards on our behalf and on behalf of the entire Ummah.'" (1)

## The Incident of Seven Men of the Ansaar Martyred During the Battle of Uhud

Hadhrat Anas رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ reports that when the Mushrikeen surrounded Rasulullaah رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ during the Battle of Uhud, Rasulullaah رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ was with seven men from the Ansaar and one from the Quraysh. Rasulullaah رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ said, "Who will repulse them from us and be my companion in Jannah?" An Ansaari stepped forward and fought until he was martyred. When the Mushrikeen again surrounded Rasulullaah رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ, he again announced, "Who will repulse them from us and be my companion in Jannah?" (Another Ansaari went forward and fought until he was also martyred. Rasulullaah رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ and the others were repeatedly surrounded and repulsed by each one of the seven Ansaar until) Eventually all seven had been martyred. Rasulullaah رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ then said, "We have not been fair to our companions (by leaving them to fight single-handedly)." (2)

Another narration from Hadhrat Jaabir رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ states that after being overwhelmed during the Battle of Uhud, the Muslims dispersed from around Rasulullaah رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ and the only people with him were eleven men from the Ansaar and Hadhrat Talha bin Ubaydillaah رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ. Rasulullaah رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ had begun climbing the mountain when the Mushrikeen caught up with him. Rasulullaah رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ then asked, "Is there none to repulse them?" "I am here, O Rasulullaah رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ!" responded Hadhrat Talha رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ. "Stay where you are, O Talha," Rasulullaah رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ instructed. One of the Ansaar then said, "I shall, O Rasulullaah رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ!" As the Ansaari fought in their defence, Rasulullaah رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ and the others with him continued climbing. The Ansaari was eventually martyred and the Mushrikeen were again catching up with Rasulullaah رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ.

Rasulullaah رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ again asked, "Is there none to repulse them?" When Hadhrat Talha رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ again volunteered for the task, Rasulullaah رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ gave him the same instruction as before. One of the Ansaar said, "Then I shall, O Rasulullaah رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ!" As the Ansaari fought in their defence, the others continued climbing. This Ansaari was also martyred and the Mushrikeen again started catching up with Rasulullaah رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ. Rasulullaah رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ then repeated his request as before (every time an Ansaari was martyred defending them) to which Hadhrat Talha رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ repeatedly volunteered himself. Rasulullaah رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ however, kept holding him back, to which an Ansaari volunteered himself and received permission to fight. Each one then fought as the others had fought until none but Hadhrat Talha رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ was left with Rasulullaah رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ.

However, the Mushrikeen again surrounded Rasulullaah رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ. When Rasulullaah رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ announced, "Is there none to repulse them?" Hadhrat Talha رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ replied,

(1) Haakim, narrating from Ibn Is'haaq. Dhahabi has commented on the chain of narrators. The complete narration of Ibn Is'haaq is reported in *Al Bid'aa'ya wan Nihaaya* (Vol.4 Pg.39). Imaam Maalik has also reported the narration in his *Mu'atta* (Pg. 175) as has Ibn Sa'd (Vol.3 Pg.523).

(2) Ahmad and Muslim.

"I shall". Hadhrat Talha **رَضِيَ اللَّهُ عَنْهُ** then fought as much as all the previous Sahabah **رَضِيَ اللَّهُ عَنْهُمْ** combined. When his fingertips became severely injured, he exclaimed, "Hass!" (An Arabic expression roughly equivalent to "Oh Dear!".) Rasulullaah **ﷺ** said to him, "Had you exclaimed Bismillaah, the angels would have lifted you to the heavens in full view of the people and enter you into the skies." Rasulullaah **ﷺ** then climbed to the top of the mountain where he joined the other Sahabah **رَضِيَ اللَّهُ عَنْهُمْ** who had regrouped there. (1)

## The Martyrdom of Hadhrat Yamaan **رَضِيَ اللَّهُ عَنْهُ** and Hadhrat Thaabit bin Qais **رَضِيَ اللَّهُ عَنْهُ**

Hadhrot Mahmood bin Labeed says that when Rasulullaah **ﷺ** marched to Uhud, Hadhrot Yamaan bin Jaabir **رَضِيَ اللَّهُ عَنْهُ** (the father of Hadhrot Hudhayfa **رَضِيَ اللَّهُ عَنْهُ**) and Hadhrot Thabit bin Qais **رَضِيَ اللَّهُ عَنْهُ** were taken to a fortress together with the women and children since they were very old men. The one said to the other, "Shame on you! What are we waiting for? By Allaah! What is left of any of our lives is equivalent to the amount of thirst a donkey can bear (of all animals, the donkey is least capable of enduring thirst). We shall have to die either today or tomorrow. Why don't we take our swords and join Rasulullaah **ﷺ**?"

The two men then joined the Muslim army without the knowledge of anyone. While Hadhrot Thaabit bin Qais **رَضِيَ اللَّهُ عَنْهُ** was killed by the Mushrikeen, the father of Hadhrot Hudhayfa **رَضِيَ اللَّهُ عَنْهُ** was killed by the swords of the Muslims who did not recognise him. Hadhrot Hudhayfa **رَضِيَ اللَّهُ عَنْهُ** shouted, "My father! My father!" but the Muslims (who had killed him) truthfully said, "We swear by Allaah that we did not recognise him." Hadhrot Hudhayfa **رَضِيَ اللَّهُ عَنْهُ** acknowledged what they said by saying, "May Allaah forgive you for He is the Most Merciful of those who show mercy." When Rasulullaah **ﷺ** wanted to pay the blood money, Hadhrot Hudhayfa **رَضِيَ اللَّهُ عَنْهُ** forgave it. This increased the status of Hadhrot Hudhayfa **رَضِيَ اللَّهُ عَنْهُ** in the eyes of Rasulullaah **ﷺ**. (2)

Another narration adds that the two men also said, "We shall then join up with Rasulullaah **ﷺ**. Perhaps Allaah shall bless us with martyrdom as we fight by the side of Rasulullaah **ﷺ**." They then took their swords and joined up with the Muslim army without the knowledge of anyone. The concluding portion of this narration states that this (forgiving the blood money) considerably increased the status of Hadhrot Hudhayfa **رَضِيَ اللَّهُ عَنْهُ** in the eyes of Rasulullaah **ﷺ**. (3)

## During the Battle of Rajee

### Hadhrot Aasim, Hadhrot Khubayb and their Companions **رَضِيَ اللَّهُ عَنْهُمْ** are Martyred

Hadhrot Abu Hurayra **رَضِيَ اللَّهُ عَنْهُ** narrates that Rasulullaah **ﷺ** once sent an expedition on a spying duty under the command of Hadhrot Aasim bin Thaabit

(1) Bayhaqi, as quoted in *Al Bidaaya wan Nihaaya* (Vol.4 Pg.26).

(2) Haakim (Vol.3 Pg.202), narrating from reliable sources.

(3) Abu Nu'aym, as quoted in *Muntakhab* (Vol.5 Pg.167).

رضي الله عنه, who was the maternal grandfather of Hadhrat Aasim bin Umar bin Khattaab رضي الله عنه. The expedition proceeded and was at a place between Usfaan and Makkah when their presence was reported to a clan from the Hudhayl tribe known as the Banu Lihyaan. With close to a hundred archers, the people of this tribe set out after the Sahabah رضي الله عنهم and traced their tracks until they arrived at a place where the Sahabah رضي الله عنهم had set up camp earlier. There they found some date stones from the provisions that the Sahabah رضي الله عنهم had brought from Madinah. Seeing this, they said, "These are dates from Yathrib." They then continued tracing the tracks until they eventually caught up with the Sahabah رضي الله عنهم.

Hadhrot Aasim رضي الله عنه and his companions took shelter on a hillock as the Banu Lihyaan surrounded them. The Banu Lihyaan called out, "We make a promise that we shall not kill any of you if you surrender to us." Hadhrot Aasim رضي الله عنه said, "As for myself, I shall never surrender into the custody of a Kaafir." He then prayed, "O Allaah! Inform Your Nabi ﷺ about us." The Sahabah رضي الله عنهم then fought the Banu Lihyaan, who martyred Hadhrot Aasim رضي الله عنه and another seven Sahabah رضي الله عنهم with arrows. The only ones who survived were Hadhrot Khubayb, Hadhrot Zaid and another Sahabi رضي الله عنه.

When the Banu Lihyaan again offered their promise, these Sahabah رضي الله عنهم agreed to it and came down from the hillock. However, no sooner did the Banu Lihyaan have control over them then they removed the strings from their bows and used it to tie the Sahabah رضي الله عنهم up. To this, the third Sahabi رضي الله عنه said, "This is the first breach of your promise." He then refused to accompany them. Despite their efforts to pull and drag him, he would not budge. They eventually killed him.

They then took Hadhrot Khubayb رضي الله عنه and Hadhrot Zaid رضي الله عنه away and sold them in Makkah. The sons of Haarith bin Aamir bin Naufal bought Hadhrot Khubayb رضي الله عنه because he had killed (their father) Haarith bin Aamir in the Battle of Badr. He lived as a prisoner with them until they eventually decided to kill him. Hadhrot Khubayb رضي الله عنه asked one of the ladies of the household for a razor to shave with and she lent it to him. (Narrating the incident later) She says, "I was unmindful of one of my little children who went towards him. When the child came to him, he put the child on his lap. When I saw this, I became terribly alarmed for he was holding the razor in his hand (I thought that he would use the razor to kill the child). Sensing fear, he said, "Are you afraid that I will kill this child? By the will of Allaah, I shall never do such a thing."

The lady narrates further, "I have never seen a prisoner better than Hadhrot Khubayb رضي الله عنه. I saw him eating a bunch of grapes at a time when there was no fruit in Makkah and he was bound in chains. It was nothing short of (unseen) sustenance that Allaah had provided for him."

When Hadhrot Khubayb رضي الله عنه was led outside the area of the Haram to be executed, he requested to be left to perform two Rakaahs of salaah. After performing the salaah, he turned to the people and said, "I would have lengthened the salaah if it were not for you thinking that (I am doing so because)

I am afraid to die." Hadhrat Khubayb رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ was the first to start the practice of performing two Rakaahs salaah at the time of execution. He then said, "O Allaah! Do not leave any of them alive." He then recited some couplets which meant:

When I am killed as a Muslim, I care not on which side I fall

*This is all for Allaah and if He wills, He could bless the severed limbs of my body*

Thereafter, Uqba bin Haarith martyred him.

Because Hadhrat Aasim رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ had killed one of the leaders of the Quraysh during the Battle of Badr, the Quraysh sent some people to bring a portion of his body to them which they may recognise as his. **However, Allaah sent a swarm of wasps to his body and they protected him from the people whom the Quraysh had sent.** They were therefore unable to get anything from the body. <sup>(1)</sup>

Hadhrot Aasim bin Amr bin Qataadah reports that after the Battle of Uhud, a delegation from the Adhal and Qaara tribes came to Rasulullaah ﷺ and said, "O Rasulullaah ﷺ! Islaam has come to us so send with us a group of your Sahabah رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُمْ to make us understand the Deen, to teach us the Qur'aan and to educate us about the Shari'ah of Islaam." Rasulullaah ﷺ therefore sent with them six Sahabah رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُمْ, whose names have been recorded.

These Sahabah رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُمْ proceeded with these people until they reached Rajee, which was a well of the Hudhayl tribe situated at one end of Hijaz where the Hada'a region commences. There the people accompanying the Sahabah رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُمْ betrayed them and solicited help from the Hudhayl tribe. Unaware of what was happening, the Sahabah رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُمْ were in their camp when they were suddenly surrounded by many men brandishing their swords. When the Sahabah رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُمْ grabbed their swords to fight them, the men said, "We swear by Allaah that we do not wish to kill you. All we want is to get some money from the people of Makkah in exchange for you. We give you assurance in the name of Allaah that we shall not kill you." However, Hadhrot Marthad رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ, Hadhrot Khaalid bin Bukayr رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ and Hadhrot Aasim رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ said, "By Allaah! We shall never ever accept a promise or pledge from a Mushrik."

## **The Couplets that Hadhrot Aasim رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ Recited and His Body is Protected from the Mushrikeen**

Hadhrot Aasim رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ then recited some couplets which meant:

"Far from being a sick man, I am a powerful archer

And my bow has a sturdy string

*Arrows with long and wide shafts glide over it*

*Death is true whereas life is a fake*

*Whatever Allaah has destined will certainly happen to a man*

*And man will have to return to Him*

*May my mother forsake me if I do not fight you"*

(1) Bukhari, Bayhaqi (Vol.9 Pg.145), Abdur Razzaq (as quoted in *Isti'aaab* Vol.3 Pg.132) and Abu Nu'aym in *Hilya* (Vol.1 Pg.112).

Hadhrat Aasim **رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ** also said the following:

*I am Abu Sulaymaan with arrow made by (the expert arrow-maker) Muq'ad*

*And with a bow that is like a kindled fire*

*I feel no fear when a warrior comes storming on a speedy camel*

*And my shield is made from the hide of a bull with little hair*

*(To top it all) I am a firm believer in everything revealed to Muhammad **رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ***

*He is also reported to have said:*

*I am Abu Sulaymaan and warriors like me are excellent archers*

*I am also from a tribe that is a most honourable one*

Hadhrat Aasim **رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ** then fought the Mushrikeen until he and his two companions were martyred. After killing Hadhrat Aasim **رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ**, the Hudhayl intended to sever his head to sell it to Sulaafa bint Sa'd bin Shuhayd. When her son was killed in the Battle of Uhud, she made a vow that if she ever got the head of Hadhrat Aasim **رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ**, she would drink wine from his skull. However, a swarm of wasps protected his body. When the Mushrikeen were prevented from getting to it, they said, "Leave him until the evening when the wasps would have left. We can then have him." Allaah then sent heavy rains flowing down the valley, which carried his body away.

Hadhrat Aasim **رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ** had made a promise to Allaah that because the Mushrikeen were impure, none of them should ever touch him and he would not touch any of them either. When the news of the wasps protecting the body of Hadhrat Aasim **رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ** reached Hadhrat Umar **رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ**, he said, "Allaah protects the Mu'min servant. Aasim **رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ** vowed that no Mushrik should touch him and that he would not touch any Mushrik during his lifetime, so Allaah prevented it from happening after his death just as Allaah prevented it during his lifetime."

## **The Story of Hadhrat Zaid bin Dathana **رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ** and his Statement About his Love for Rasulullaah **ﷺ****

(The other three Sahabah **رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُمْ** in the group) Hadhrat Khubayb **رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ**, Hadhrat Zaid bin Dathana **رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ** and Hadhrat Abdullaah bin Taariq **رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ** chose the easier option and chose to remain alive. They therefore surrendered and were taken prisoner. The Mushrikeen took them to Makkah to sell them. When they reached a place called Zahraan, Hadhrat Abdullaah bin Taariq **رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ** slipped his hands from the bonds and grabbed a sword. The Mushrikeen stepped away from him started throwing rocks at him until they eventually martyred him. His grave is in Zahraan.

This left Hadhrat Khubayb **رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ** and Hadhrat Zaid bin Dathana **رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ**. they were taken to Makkah and exchanged for two prisoners from the Hudhayl who had been in Makkah. While Hujayr bin Abi Ihaab Tameemi bought Hadhrat Khubayb **رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ**, Safwaan bin Umayyah bought Hadhrat Zaid bin Dathana **رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ** to execute him for the death of his father. Safwaan sent Hadhrat Zaid bin Dathana **رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ** outside the Haram to Tan'eem with his slave Nistaas so that he could be executed there.

Amongst the group of the Quraysh that gathered there was Abu Sufyaan bin Harb. When Hadhrat Zaid bin Dathana ﷺ was brought for execution, Abu Sufyaan said to him, "O Zaid! I ask you to swear by Allaah whether you wish that Muhammad was here with us in your place to have his head severed while you could be with your family." Hadhrat Zaid ﷺ replied, "I swear by Allaah that I would not even like a thorn to prick Muhammad ﷺ where he is while I am sitting with my family." Abu Sufyaan said, "I have never seen people love anyone as much as the companions of Muhammad ﷺ loved Muhammad ﷺ." Nistaas then executed Hadhrat Zaid ﷺ.

## The Story of Hadhrat Khubayb ﷺ in Makkah and His Salaah at the time of Death

Hadhrt Ibn Is'haaq narrates the story of Hadhrt Khubayb bin Adi ﷺ from Hadhrt Abdullaah bin Najeeh who was informed by Maariya, the freed slave of Hujayr bin Ihaab. After accepting Islaam, she narrated, "He (Hadhrt Khubayb ﷺ) was held prisoner in my home. I once saw him eating from a bunch of grapes the size of a human head at a time when there was not a grape to be eaten in all of Allaah's land."

Ibn Is'haaq narrates further from Aasim bin Umar bin Qataadah and Abdullaah bin Najeeh that she said, "When the time for his execution drew near, he asked me to send him a razor so that he may clean himself before his death. I gave the razor to the little boy from the family and told him to give it to the man in the house. By Allaah! I had just sent the boy with the razor to him when I exclaimed, 'What have I done! By Allaah! That man will have his revenge by killing the boy and have a life in exchange for his own!' However, when the boy handed the razor over to Hadhrt Khubayb ﷺ, he took it and said, 'By your life! Did your mother not fear any treachery from me when she sent you with this razor?' He then sent the boy off." Ibn Hishaam says that it is commonly believed that the boy was the son of Maariya.

Ibn Is'haaq narrates further from Aasim that the Mushrikeen took Hadhrt Khubayb ﷺ out of the Haram to Tan'leem where they intended to crucify him. He then requested, "If you permit, could I please perform two Rakaahs salaah." "Go ahead," they agreed, "Perform your salaah." Hadhrt Khubayb ﷺ then performed two complete and perfect Rakaahs of salaah. Thereafter, he turned to the people and said, "By Allaah! But for the fact that you would say I lengthened the salaah for fear of death, I would have performed a longer salaah." It was Hadhrt Khubayb ﷺ who was the first to initiate the practice of Muslims to perform two Rakaahs salaah at the time of being executed.

The Mushrikeen then lifted him up and when they tied him on the wooden structure, he prayed, "O Allaah! We have conveyed the message of Your Rasool ﷺ. Do inform him tomorrow of what has happened to us." He then added, "O Allaah! Count each one of them (these Mushrikeen), kill each one of them and leave not one of them alive." He was then martyred.

Hadhrat Mu'aawiya bin Abu Sufyaan رَضِيَ اللَّهُ عَنْهُ used to say, "I was also present on that day with (my father) Abu Sufyaan and others. I saw my father throw me down on the ground out of fear for the curse of Hadhrat Khubayb رَضِيَ اللَّهُ عَنْهُ. He did this because people used to say that if a person lies on his back when he is cursed, the curse would miss him."

The *Maghaazi* of Moosa bin Uqba narrates that Hadhrat Khubayb رَضِيَ اللَّهُ عَنْهُ and Hadhrat Zaid bin Dathana رَضِيَ اللَّهُ عَنْهُ were both martyred on the same day and it was on that day that Rasulullaah ﷺ was heard saying, "Salaams to you (two) as well. The Quraysh have martyred Khubayb." It is also narrated that when the Mushrikeen crucified Hadhrat Zaid bin Dathana رَضِيَ اللَّهُ عَنْهُ, they first speared him to make him forsake his Deen. However, this only increased his Imaan and faith in Islaam. Mosa bin Uqba also narrates that when Hadhrat Khubayb رَضِيَ اللَّهُ عَنْهُ was lifted on to the wooden structure the Mushrikeen asked him to swear by Allaah whether he preferred to have Rasulullaah ﷺ in his place (in exchange for his own freedom). Hadhrat Khubayb رَضِيَ اللَّهُ عَنْهُ replied, "Never! I swear by the Exalted Allaah that I would not even accept a thorn pricking the foot of Rasulullaah ﷺ as ransom for my life." The Mushrikeen laughed at this. Ibn Is'haaq has reported this with reference to Hadhrat Zaid bin Dathana رَضِيَ اللَّهُ عَنْهُ. Allaah knows best. (1)

## **The Statement of Hadhrat Khubayb رَضِيَ اللَّهُ عَنْهُ Concerning his Love for Rasulullaah ﷺ and the Couplets he Recited Before his Execution**

A lengthy narration of Hadhrat Urwa bin Zubayr رَضِيَ اللَّهُ عَنْهُ states that the children of the Mushrikeen killed at Badr executed Hadhrat Khubayb رَضِيَ اللَّهُ عَنْهُ. While he was tied to the cross they were using their weapons on him, they asked him in a loud voice to swear whether he preferred Rasulullaah ﷺ to be in his place. He responded by saying, "I swear by the Magnificent Allaah that I would not even accept a thorn pricking the foot of Rasulullaah ﷺ as ransom for my life." The Mushrikeen laughed at this. When he was lifted on to the cross, Hadhrat Khubayb رَضِيَ اللَّهُ عَنْهُ recited some couplets which meant:

*"The groups have amassed around me and have also gathered  
their tribes and have collected a large gathering  
They have also gathered their women and children  
As I have been brought to a large trunk of a palm tree (to be crucified)  
To Allaah do I plead my case of estrangement and my grief  
And the place these groups have prepared for my death  
O Master of the Glorious Throne! Grant me fortitude against what they intend to do to me  
They have cut through my flesh and my hopes have been exposed  
This is all for Allaah and if He wills,  
He could bless the severed limbs of my body*

(1) Ibn Is'haaq, as quoted *Al Bidaaya wan Nihaaya* (Vol.4 Pg.63).

*By my life! When I am killed as a Muslim I care not  
In what condition will my resting place be for Allaah" (1)*

*Another narration adds the following line after the first couplet:*

*"They all express their hatred for me and make every effort  
to oppose me because I am in fetters and in a place of destruction"*

*The following lines are then added after the fifth couplet:*

*"They have given me a choice between kufr and death whereas death is better*

*My eyes are tearing but not out of any fear*

*I have no fear for death because I have to die*

*I have fear only for the leaping flames of the raging fire*

*By Allaah! When I die as a Muslim, I care not*

*on which side I shall fall for the sake of Allaah*

*I shall express no fear to my enemy*

*Because my return shall be to Allaah" (2)*

## During the Expedition to Bir Ma'oonah

### The Story of the Sahabah ﷺ at Bir Ma'oonah

Several men of knowledge including Mughiera bin Abdur Rahmaan and Abdullaah bin Abu Bakr bin Muhammad bin Amr bin Hazam narrate that the expert spear-thrower Abu Baraa Aamir bin Maalik bin Ja'far once came to Madinah to meet Rasulullaah ﷺ. Rasulullaah ﷺ presented Islaam to him and invited him to accept. However, he neither accepted Islaam nor shunned it. Instead he said, "O Muhammad ﷺ! If you send some of your companions to the people of Najd to call them towards Islaam, I strongly feel that they would accept." Rasulullaah ﷺ replied, "I fear harm coming to them from the people of Najd." Abu Baraa reassured Rasulullaah ﷺ by saying, "I stand surety for their safety. Do send them to invite people towards your Deen."

Rasulullaah ﷺ then sent Hadhrat Mundhir bin Amr ﷺ who was called "Al Mu'niq Liyamoot" ("one who is eager to die") together with seventy Sahabah ﷺ who were amongst the best of the Muslims. They included Hadhrat Haarith bin Simma ﷺ, Hadhrat Haraam bin Milhaan ﷺ of the Banu Adi bin Najjaar, Hadhrat Urwa bin Asmaa bin Silt Sulami ﷺ, Hadhrat Naafi bin Budayl bin Warqaa Khuzaa'ee ﷺ and Hadhrat Aamir bin Fuhayra ﷺ who was the freed slave of Hadhrat Abu Bakr ﷺ. The group travelled until they reached Bir Ma'oonah, which was a well located between the lands of the Banu Aamir tribe and the rocky plain of the Banu Sulaym tribe.

When they set up camp there, Hadhrat Haraam bin Milhaan ﷺ sent the letter of Rasulullaah ﷺ to Aamir bin Tufayl. When the messenger arrived, Aamir did not even look at the letter before attacking the messenger and killing him. He then solicited help from the Banu Aamir tribe but they declined to respond to his call. They made it clear that they would never betray Abu Baraa who had entered

(1) Tabraani. Haythami (Vol.6 Pg.200) has commented on the chain of narrators.

(2) Ibn Is'haaq, as quoted *Al Bidaaya wan Nihaaya* (Vol.4 Pg.67).

into a treaty with them. Aamir then sought help from Usayya, Ri'al and Dhakwaan clans who belonged to the Banu Sulaym tribe. They responded to his call and left (with him). They amassed around the Sahabah رضي الله عنهم and surrounded their camp. When the Sahabah رضي الله عنهم saw the enemy they grabbed their swords and fought until all of them were martyred. May Allaah shower His mercies on them. The only survivor was Hadhrat Ka'b bin Zaid رضي الله عنه from the Banu Dinaar bin Najjaar tribe. There was still life in him when the attackers left and he was removed from amongst the dead. He still lived afterwards until he was martyred during the Battle of Khandaq.

Hadhrat Amr bin Umayyah Dhamri رضي الله عنه and an Ansaari from the Banu Amr bin Auf tribe were busy grazing the animals and were unaware of the attack on the other Sahabah رضي الله عنهم. All that made them aware was (carrion-eating) birds hovering above the camp. They said, "By Allaah! Something must have happened for these birds (to be here)." The two men then went to investigate and found the Muslims lying in pools of blood. The horsemen (who had attacked the Sahabah رضي الله عنهم) were still there. The Ansaari asked Hadhrat Amr bin Umayyah رضي الله عنه, "What do you suggest?" "I suggest that we go and inform Rasulullaah صلى الله عليه وسلم about what had happened," he replied. The Ansaari then said, "To save my life I would not like to leave a place where someone like Mundhir bin Amr رضي الله عنه has been martyred. I would also not like to just inform others about people who have been martyred (I prefer to be amongst them)." He then fought until he was martyred. Hadhrat Amr bin Umayyah رضي الله عنه was taken prisoner but later released by Aamir bin Tufayl when he informed them that he belonged to the Mudhar tribe. However, Aamir cut off Hadhrat Amr رضي الله عنه's forelocks and gave him freedom because his mother was required to free a slave (so he freed Hadhrat Amr رضي الله عنه on her behalf). (1)

### **The Last Words of Hadhrat Haraam رضي الله عنه Because of which his Killer Accepted Islaam**

Hadhrat Anas رضي الله عنه narrates that Rasulullaah صلى الله عليه وسلم once dispatched Hadhrat Haraam رضي الله عنه the brother of Hadhrat Ummu Sulaym رضي الله عنها together with seventy riders on an expedition. The leader of the Mushrikeen (in the region where the expedition went) was Aamir bin Tufayl. He had given Rasulullaah صلى الله عليه وسلم a choice between three options (when he said), "Either (1) you have the villagers for yourself and leave the city dwellers to me or (2) you appoint me as your successor or (3) I shall fight you with the support of thousands of men from the Ghitfaan tribe."

However, Aamir was afflicted with a plague in the home of a certain woman. He said, "It is a sore like that which afflicts camels and in the house of some woman (he regarded it below his dignity to die in the house of some simple woman by whom he stayed during his travels). Bring me my horse." He then died on the back of his horse.

(1) Ibn Is'haaq, as quoted *Al Bidaaya wan Nihaaya* (Vol.4 Pg.73). Tabraani has also reported the narration from reliable sources as confirmed by Haythami (Vol.6 Pg.129).

Hadhrat Haraam ﷺ the brother of Hadhrat Ummu Sulaym ﷺ, a crippled Sahabi ﷺ and another Sahabi ﷺ from some tribe left (to deliver the letter). Hadhrat Haraam ﷺ said to the other two, "Stay close until I return to you. If they grant me safety, you join me, and if they kill me, you can go back to your companions." Hadhrat Haraam ﷺ then approached the Mushrikeen and said, "Will you grant me safety so that I may deliver the message of Rasulullaah ﷺ?" As he was busy talking to them, they motioned to a man to come up to Hadhrat Haraam ﷺ from the back and stabbed him with a spear. One of the narrators by the name of Hammaam says that he was stabbed with a spear that pierced right through his body. He then exclaimed, "Allaahu Akbar! By the Rabb of the Kabah, I am successful!" The Sahabah ﷺ (who were with Hadhrat Haraam ﷺ) joined up with the others but they were all martyred except for the crippled Sahabi ﷺ who had been on top of a hillock. It was with reference to these martyred Sahabah ﷺ that Allaah revealed the following verse of the Qur'aan that was later abrogated:

"We have met our Rabb Who is happy with us and has made us happy."

For thirty mornings afterwards, Rasulullaah ﷺ cursed the Ri'al, Dhakwaan, Banu Lihyaan and Usayya tribes who opposed Allaah and His Rasool ﷺ. (1)

Another narration of Bukhari states that when Hadhrat Haraam ﷺ the uncle of Hadhrat Anas ﷺ was stabbed with a spear on the expedition to Bir Ma'oona, he wiped his blood on his face and was heard saying, "By the Rabb of the Kabah, I am successful!" A narration reported by Waaqidi says that the person who martyred Hadhrat Haraam ﷺ was Jabbaar bin Salma Kilaabi. When he stabbed Hadhrat Haraam ﷺ with a spear, Hadhrat Haraam ﷺ cried out, "By the Rabb of the Kabah, I am successful!" Afterwards when Jabbaar asked about the meaning of the statement "I am successful", the people told him that Hadhrat Haraam ﷺ was referring to his successful entry into Jannah. He then said, "By Allaah! He has spoken the truth." Jabbaar then accepted Islaam. (2)

## During the Battle of Mu'ta

### Hadhrat Abdullaah bin Rawaaha ﷺ Weeps upon Leaving and His Poem asking for Martyrdom

Hadhrat Urwa bin Zubayr ﷺ reports that Rasulullaah ﷺ sent an expedition to Mu'ta in Jumaadal Ula 8 A.H. Rasulullaah ﷺ appointed Hadhrat Zaid bin Haaritha ﷺ as commander of the expedition. Rasulullaah ﷺ then added, "If Zaid is killed, Ja'far bin Abi Taalib should take command and if Ja'far is killed, then Abdullaah bin Rawaaha should take command." The Sahabah ﷺ prepared their provisions for the journey and then got ready to leave. They were three thousand in number. When they started leaving, the people came to bid farewell to the commanders that Rasulullaah ﷺ appointed.

As Hadhrat Abdullaah bin Rawaaha ﷺ was being greeted along with the

(1) Bukhari.

(2) *Al Bidaaya wan Nihaaya* (Vol.4 Pg.71).

others, he started weeping. When the people asked him what it was that made him weep, he said, "I swear by Allaah that it is neither love for this world nor my attachment to you that makes me weep. However, I have heard Rasulullaah ﷺ recite a verse for the Qur'aan that speaks of the fire of Jahannam:

﴿وَأَنْ مِنْكُمْ إِلَّا وَارِدُهَا كَانَ عَلَى رَبِّكَ حَتْمًا مَقْضِيًّا﴾ (سورة مريم: ٧١)

Every one of you shall pass by it (*everyone shall pass over Jahannam as they cross the bridge of Siraat that spans Jahannam*). This is a decreed command of your Rabb. {Surah Maryam, verse 71}

I have no idea how am I to return after this crossing." The other Muslims said to him, "May Allaah be your companion. May He remove your worries and return you to us hail and healthy." Hadhrrat Abdullaah bin Rawaaha رضي الله عنه then recited the following couplets which meant:

"I implore Ar Rahman for forgiveness

*And the strike of a wide sword that causes foaming blood to spurt forth  
Or (I implore Allaah for) the fatal strike of a blood-thirsty enemy's spear  
That pierces through my intestines and liver  
And when people pass by my grave, it will be said,  
'May Allaah care for this warrior' who has already been cared for"*

As the army were preparing to leave, Hadhrrat Abdullaah bin Rawaaha رضي الله عنه went to greet Rasulullaah ﷺ. He then recited the following couplets which meant:

"May Allaah preserve all the good He has granted you

*As He did for Moosa عليه السلام, and may He assist you as others were assisted  
I see you ever increasing in good  
And Allaah knows that my sight is excellent  
You are the Rasul and whoever is deprived of your munificence  
and your attention truly is ill-fated"*

The army then left. Rasulullaah ﷺ left to bid farewell to them and when he turned back (to return to Madinah), Hadhrrat Abdullaah bin Rawaaha رضي الله عنه said:

"May peace remain with the great man whom I have greeted amongst the date palms, who is the best of those who bid farewell and the best of friends"

## **Hadhrrat Abdullaah bin Rawaaha رضي الله عنه Encourages the Sahabah رضي الله عنهم towards Martyrdom**

The expedition marched until they set up camp at a place called Ma'aan which was located in Shaam. There they received intelligence that Heraclius had arrived in Ma'aab in the district of Balqaa with a hundred thousand Roman soldiers. In addition to this, he had been reinforced by another hundred thousand soldiers from the Lakhm, Judhaam, Qayn, Bahraa and Baly tribes. Commanding the reinforcements was a man named Maalik bin Zaafilea who belonged to the Iraasha

clan, an offshoot of the Baly tribe. When this news reached the Muslims, they stayed in Ma'aan for two nights, discussing their situation.

They said, "We should send a message to Rasulullaah **ﷺ** informing him about the numbers of the enemy. He will then either send reinforcements to us or issue further instructions for us to follow." It was then that Hadhrat Abdullaah bin Rawaaha **رضي الله عنه** bolstered the courage of the Muslim by saying, "O people! By Allaah! The thing that you seem to dislike is the very thing for which you have left, martyrdom. **We have never fought with reliance in our numbers and our strength. We have always fought on the strength of this Deen that Allaah had blessed us with.** March ahead! You will have either one of two excellent things, victory or martyrdom." The others echoed, "By Allaah! Ibn Rawaaha has spoken the truth!"

The Sahabah **رضي الله عنهم** then proceeded to the border of Balqaa, where the coalition of Heraclius's Roman army and the Arab forces met them at one of the villages of Balqaa called Mashaarif. As the enemy forces drew closer, the Muslims regrouped at a village called Mu'ta. It was there that the armies clashed. The Muslims arranged their army by appointing a Sahabi from the Banu Udhra tribe called Qutba bin Qataadah **رضي الله عنه** as commander of the right flank and a Sahabi from the Ansaar called Abaaya bin Maalik as commander of the left flank. In this way they met the enemy and started fighting.

Hadhrt Zaid bin Haaritha **رضي الله عنه** fought courageously with the flag of Rasulullaah **ﷺ** until he was martyred by a spear. Hadhrt Ja'far **رضي الله عنه** then grabbed hold of the flag and fought until he was also martyred. He was the first Muslim in the history of Islaam who disabled his animal (to dispel thoughts of fleeing from the battlefield). (1)

Another narration of Hadhrt Urwa **رضي الله عنه** states that afterwards (after the martyrdom of Hadhrt Zaid **رضي الله عنه**) Hadhrt Ja'far **رضي الله عنه** grabbed hold of the flag and fought with it until when the battle became pitched, he dismounted his red horse and hamstrung it. He then fought until he was also martyred. He was the first Muslim in the history of Islaam to disable his animal. (2)

## **The Couplets that Hadhrt Abdullaah bin Rawaaha **رضي الله عنه** Recited During the Journey**

Hadhrt Zaid bin Arqam **رضي الله عنه** says, "I was an orphan in the care of Hadhrt Abdullaah bin Rawaaha **رضي الله عنه**. He took me along on the journey (to Mu'ta) and seated me behind him on his satchel. By Allaah! He was travelling one night when I heard him recite the following couplets (which mean):

'(O my camel) When you take me closer, carrying my carriage along  
*for four days after leaving Hisaa*

*May you then have comfort and not any more hardship*

*For I shall not be returning to my wife and family (because I shall become a*

(1) Ibn Is'haaq, as quoted *Al Bidaaya wan Nihaaya* (Vol.4 Pg.241).

(2) Tabraani, narrating from reliable sources, as confirmed by Haythami (Vol.6 Pg.157). Abu Nu'aym in his *Hilya* (Vol.1 Pg.118) has also reported the narration.

*martyr, you will have no more work to do)  
The Muslims shall return and leave me there  
in the land of Shaam where my final stay will be  
My close relatives who are close to Allaah will take you back  
Whereas (by my death) my relationship with them shall cease  
At this stage I neither have concern for date palms that grow by themselves  
Nor for those that need to be watered"*

Hadhrat Zaid bin Arqam رضي الله عنه continues to narrate, "When I heard these couplets from him, I began to weep. He struck me with his whip and said, 'You little imp! Why should it be a bother for you if Allaah blesses me with martyrdom and you can ride back (to Madinah) on my camel?" (1)

## **The Couplets that Hadhrat Abdullaah bin Rawaaha رضي الله عنه Recited During the Battle**

Hadhrat Abbaad bin Abdullaah bin Zubayr رضي الله عنه narrates from his foster father from the Banu Murrah clan that Hadhrat Abdullaah bin Rawaaha رضي الله عنه grabbed hold of the flag after Hadhrat Ja'far bin Abi Taalib was martyred. He then took it forward riding on his horse. Because his heart seemed reluctant to dismount (to engage the enemy), he said to himself:

*"O my heart! I command you in the name of Allaah to dismount  
You will have to dismount either willingly or unwillingly  
(Especially) If the enemy gather and shout out in loud voices (as they attack)  
Why do I see you displaying an aversion for Jannah  
For a long time you have enjoyed a good life  
You are merely like a drop in a waterbag (will come to an end very soon)"*

Hadhrat Abdullaah bin Rawaaha رضي الله عنه also recited the following couplets which mean:

*"O my heart! If you are not killed, you will still have to die some day  
This is the pronounced decree of death that you will have to enter  
You have been granted whatever you desire  
Now if you do what those two (Hadhrat Zaid and Ja'far رضي الله عنه) have done, you  
will have been rightly guided"*

He then dismounted his horse. As he did so, his cousin came to him with a piece of meat saying, "Strengthen yourself with this because you have experienced much hunger the last few days." Hadhrat Abdullaah bin Rawaaha رضي الله عنه took the meat and had taken just one bite from it when he heard an uproar at one end of the battlefield. He said to himself, "(The Muslims are giving their lives) And you are still engrossed in worldly affairs?" Throwing the meat from his hand, he **grabbed his sword and went forward, fighting until he was martyred.** (2)

(1) Ibn Is'haaq, as quoted *Al Bidaaya wan Nihaaya* (Vol.4 Pg.243), Abu Nu'aym in his *Hilya* (Vol.1 Pg.119) and Tabraani, as quoted *Majma'uz Zawaa'id* (Vol.6 Pg.158).

(2) Ibn Is'haaq, as quoted in *Al Bidaaya wan Nihaaya* (Vol.4 Pg.245), Abu Nu'aym in his *Hilya* (Vol.1 Pg.120) and Tabraani have also reported the narration from reliable sources as confirmed by Haythami (Vol.6 Pg.160).

## Hadhrat Ja'far **رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ** Disables his Horse and Recites Some Couplets as he Fights

Hadhrat Abbaad bin Abdullaah bin Zubayr **رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ** narrates that his foster father from the Banu Murrâh who participated in the Battle of Mu'ta said, "By Allaah! It is as if I can still see Ja'far **رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ** dismounting his red horse and then hamstringing it. He then fought the enemy until he was martyred. As he fought, he was reciting the following couplets (which meant):

*'O how delightful is Jannah and drawing close to it  
With its pure and cool waters  
Their punishment has drawn close to the Romans  
Who are non-believers without any mutual relations  
When I meet them on the battlefield, I shall have to strike at them with my sword.'* (1)

## During the Battle of Yamaamah

### Hadhrat Zaid bin Khattaab **رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ** and other Sahabah **رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُمْ** Encourage the Muslims to be Steadfast and to Seek Martyrdom

Hadhrat Abdur Rahmaan **رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ** who was the son of Hadhrat Zaid bin Khattaab **رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ** narrates that (his father) Hadhrat Zaid bin Khattaab **رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ** carried the flag of the Muslims during the Battle of Yamaamah. The Muslims were on the verge of being defeated when (their enemy) the Haneefa tribe<sup>(2)</sup> overwhelmed the Muslim infantry. Hadhrat Zaid bin Khattaab **رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ** then said to the Muslims, "Do not return to the camp for the infantry has been defeated." Shouting at the top of his voice, he then said, "O Allaah! I beg Your pardon on behalf of my companions who have fled and I exonerate myself from the evil that Musaylama and Muhakkam bin Tufayl (the commander of Musaylama's army) have casued." He then firmly grabbed hold of the flag and advanced with it in the midst of the enemy, where he fought courageously with his sword until he was martyred. May Allaah shower His mercies on him.

When the flag fell from his hand, it was taken up by Hadhrat Saalim the freed slave of Hadhrat Abu Hudhayfa **رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ**. The Muslims said to him, "We fear that the enemy would attack us from your side." He replied, "I would be a terrible bearer of the Qur'aan if the enemy attacks from my side (I shall fight any attacks they launch from my side)." Hadhrat Zaid bin Khattaab **رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ** was martyred in 12 A.H. (3)

(1) Ibn Is'haaq, *Al Bida'ayâ wan Niha'ayâ* (Vol.4 Pg.244), Abu Nu'aym in his *Hilya* (Vol.1 Pg.118) and Abu Dawood, as quoted in *Isaaba* (Vol.1 Pg.238).

(2) They were the tribe of Musaylama Kadhaab who falsely claimed to be a prophet.

(3) Haakim (Vol.3 Pg.227) and Ibn Sa'd (Vol.3 Pg.274).

## Hadhrat Thaabit رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ and Hadhrat Saalim

### رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ Dig Holes During a Battle to Keep them

#### from Fleeing and to Ensure that they are Martyred

The daughter of Hadhrat Thaabit bin Qais bin Shammaas رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ narrates that when Hadhrat Abu Bakr رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ requested the Muslim to fight against those who forsook Islaam from Yamaamah and the followers of Musaylama, Hadhrat Thaabit bin Qais bin Shammaas رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ was amongst those who marched. **When the Muslim army clashed with Musaylama and the Banu Haneefa tribe, the Muslims were defeated in three battles.** It was then that Hadhrat Thaabit bin Qais bin Shammaas رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ and Hadhrat Saalim the freed slave of Hadhrat Abu Hudhayfa رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ said, "This was not how we fought during the time of Rasulullaah ﷺ." They then dug a foxhole for themselves, got in and fought until they were both martyred. (1)

Hadhrat Muhammad bin Thaabit bin Qais bin Shammaas رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ narrates that when the Muslims were initially defeated during the Battle of Yamaamah, Hadhrat Saalim the freed slave of Hadhrat Abu Hudhayfa رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ said, "This was not how we fought during the time of Rasulullaah ﷺ." He then dug a foxhole for himself and stood in it. Carrying the flag of the Muhaajireen with him, he then fought until he was martyred. May Allaah shower His mercy on him. This occurred during the Battle of Yamaamah during the Khilaafah of Hadhrat Abu Bakr رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ in 12 A.H. (2)

## The Call Hadhrat Abbaad bin Bishr رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ Made to the Ansaar Before he was Martyred

Hadhrat Abu Sa'eed Khudri رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ reports that Hadhrat Abbaad bin Bishr رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ said to him, "O Abu Sa'eed! Last night I saw (in a dream) that the sky opened up for me and then shut behind me (after I had entered). Inshaa Allaah, this indicates martyrdom." Hadhrat Abu Sa'eed Khudri رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ says, "I told him that he had seen an excellent dream. During the Battle of Yamaamah, I then saw him calling to the Ansaar, 'Break the sheaths of your swords and separate from the others. Let us Ansaar separate! Let us Ansaar separate (from the other soldiers so that we may show our courage and encourage the others thereby)!' Four hundred soldiers only from the Ansaar gathered aside. Abbaad bin Bishr رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ, Abu Dujaanah رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ and Baraa bin Maalik رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ led them to the orchard (where the enemy had fortified themselves) and fought very hard. Abbaad bin Bishr رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ was martyred. May Allaah shower His mercies on him. I saw so many wounds on his face that I could recognise him only by signs on his body." (3)

(1) Tabraani. Haythami (Vol.9 Pg.322) has commented on the chain of narrators. Ibn Abdul Birr has also reported the narration in *Isti'aaab* (Vol.1 Pg.194), as has Baghawi, as quoted in *Isaaba* (Vol.1 Pg.196).

(2) Ibn Sa'd (Vol.3 Pg.88).

(3) Ibn Sa'd (Vol.3 Pg.441).

## The Call Hadhrat Abu Aqeel رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ Made to the Ansaar Before he was Martyred

Hadhrat Jafar bin Abdullaah bin Aslam Hamdaani رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ narrates that the first casualty during the Battle of Yamaamah was Hadhrat Abu Aqeel Unayfi رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ. An arrow struck him between his shoulder and heart. The arrow bent and therefore did not kill him. When the arrow was removed, the left side of his body became paralysed because of the injury. This occurred during the early part of the day and he was taken to the camp. When the fighting grew intense, the Muslims were being defeated and driven back behind their camp.

As Hadhrat Abu Aqeel رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ lay in a weak condition because of his wound, he heard Hadhrat Ma'n bin Adi رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ calling to Ansaar, "Trust in Allaah! Trust in Allaah and attack the enemy once again." Hadhrat Ma'n رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ was walking quickly ahead of the others. This was during the time when the Ansaar were shouting, "Let us Ansaar separate! Let us Ansaar separate!" One by one, the Ansaar started separating from the others (and grouping together to launch an attack that would encourage the others).

Hadhrat Abdullaah bin Umar رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ says, "Abu Aqeel رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ jumped up to join his people (the Ansaar). I said to him, 'What are you doing, Abu Aqeel? You are in no condition to fight.' He replied, 'A caller has announced my name.' 'He has called for the Ansaar and is not referring to the injured,' I explained. He replied, 'I am from the Ansaar and I shall respond even though I have to crawl.'"

Hadhrat Abdullaah bin Umar رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ narrates further that Hadhrat Abu Aqeel رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ then fastened his back and took a naked sword in his right hand. He then started calling, "O Ansaar! Attack the enemy more like the Battle of Hunayn." The Ansaar then regrouped and spearheaded an extremely fierce attack on the enemy, forcing them to retreat to an orchard. The Muslims and the enemy met at close quarters and crossed swords with each other.

Hadhrat Abdullaah bin Umar رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ says that he saw the injured arm of Hadhrat Abu Aqeel رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ severed from the shoulder and lying on the ground. Hadhrat Abu Aqeel رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ sustained fourteen wounds, each of which were fatal by themselves. Musaylama was killed and when Hadhrat Abdullaah bin Umar رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ reached Hadhrat Abu Aqeel رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ, he was lying on the ground breathing his last. When Hadhrat Abdullaah bin Umar رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ called Hadhrat Abu Aqeel t's name, he responded by muttered in a faint voice, "At your service! Who has won the battle?" Hadhrat Abdullaah bin Umar رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ informed him, "Glad tidings (we have been victorious)!" Raising his voice, Hadhrat Abdullaah bin Umar رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ added, "The enemy of Allaah had been killed!" Hadhrat Abu Aqeel رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ then pointed his finger towards the heavens, praised Allaah and then passed away. May Allaah shower His mercy on him.

Hadhrat Abdullaah bin Umar رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ says that after returning, he informed (his father) Hadhrat Umar رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ about the events that transpired, to which Hadhrat Umar رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ commented, "May Allaah shower His mercy on him. He continued asking for martyrdom and searching for it. As far as I know, he was amongst the

best of Rasulullaah ﷺ's companions and was one of the early Muslims." (1)

## The Martyrdom of Hadhrat Thaabit bin Qais

رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ

Hadhrt Anas رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ says that when the Muslim army suffered defeat initially during the Battle of Yamaamah, he saw Hadhrt Thaabit bin Qais رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ applying perfume (in preparation for entering the battlefield). Hadhrt Anas رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ said to him, "O uncle! Do you not see what is happening (the Muslim are busy retreating)?" He replied, "This is not how we used to fight during the time of Rasulullaah ﷺ! Terrible is the habit that you people have made the enemy accustomed to (by being repeatedly defeated)! O Allaah! I absolve myself from what these people (the Muslims) have done (by fleeing) and from what those people (the enemy) have done." He then fought until he was killed. (2)

Another narration states that when the Muslims were being defeated during the Battle of Yamaamah, Hadhrt Thaabit رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ said, "Shame on those people (the enemy) and whatever they worship and shame on these people (the Muslim) for what they have done!" He then killed a man standing on a depression of a wall (of the orchard they were using as a fortress). Hadhrt Thaabit رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ was then martyred. (3)

## During the Battle of Yarmook

### Hadhrt Ikrama bin Abu Jahal رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ is Martyred Together with Four Hundred Muslims

Hadhrt Thaabit Bunaani رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ narrates that during a certain battle (the Battle of Yarmook), Hadhrt Ikrama bin Abu Jahal رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ dismounted from his animal and was walking when Hadhrt Khaalid bin Waleed رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ said to him, "Do not do that for your death will be a hard blow to the Muslims." Hadhrt Ikrama bin Abu Jahal رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ replied, "Leave me alone, O Khaalid. You were one of the early ones with Rasulullaah ﷺ while my father and I were amongst his staunchest opponents." He then continued on foot until he was martyred. (4)

Hadhrt Abu Uthmaan Ghassaani narrates from his father that during the Battle of Yarmook, Hadhrt Ikrama bin Abu Jahal رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ said, "I fought several battles against Rasulullaah ﷺ. Should I now flee from you people today?!" He then announced, "Who will pledge to fight to their deaths?" His uncle Hadhrt Haarith bin Hishaam رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ, Hadhrt Diraar bin Azwar رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ and four hundred other prominent Muslims and horsemen took the pledge at his hand. They then fought in front of Hadhrt Khaalid رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ's tent until their wounds incapacitated all of

(1) Ibn Sa'd (Vol.3 Pg.473)

(2) Tabraani, as quoted in *Isaaba* (Vol.1 Pg.195) from reliable sources as confirmed by Haythami (Vol.9 Pg.323). Haakim (Vol.3 Pg.235) has also reported the narration.

(3) Ibn Sa'd, as quoted in *Fat'hul Baari* (Vol.6 Pg.405). Bayhaqi (Vol.9 Pg.44) has also reported a similar narration from Hadhrt Anas رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ.

(4) Ya'qoob bin Abu Sufyaan and Ibn Asaakir, as quoted in *Kanzul Ummaal* (Vol.7 Pg.75). Bayhaqi (Vol.9 Pg.44) has also reported the narration.

them. A large number of them were martyred. Amongst those martyred was Hadhrat Diraar bin Azwar رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ. (1)

Another narration while most of the four hundred men were martyred, some of them survived. Amongst them was Hadhrat Diraar bin Azwar رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ. The next morning, Hadhrat Ikrama bin Abu Jahal رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ and his son Amr were both brought to Hadhrat Khaalid bin Waleed رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ in badly wounded conditions. Hadhrat Khaalid رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ placed the head of Hadhrat Ikrama bin Abu Jahal رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ on his thigh and that of his son Hadhrat Amr on his calf. He then started wiping their faces and putting drops of water into their throats saying, "The son of Hantama (Hadhrat Umar رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ) said that we would not be martyred (but Allaah has blessed us with martyrs)."

## Miscellaneous Stories about the Enthusiasm of the Sahabah رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُمْ to Fight in the path of Allaah

### The Enthusiasm of Hadhrat Ammaar bin Yaasir رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ to Fight in the Path of Allaah

Hadhrat Abul Bakhtari and Hadhrat Maysara narrate that Hadhrat Ammaar bin Yaasir رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ was fighting in the Battle of Siffeen but was not being martyred. He then approached Hadhrat Ali رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ and said, "O Ameerul Mu'mineen! This is that very day (about which Rasulullaah ﷺ said that I would be martyred. How come I am still alive?)" Hadhrat Ali رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ replied, "Do not worry about that." This occurred three times until Hadhrat Ammaar رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ was given some milk. He drank it and said, "Indeed, Rasulullaah ﷺ said that this (milk) will be the last drink that I shall drink in this world." He then stood up and fought until he was martyred. (2)

Hadhrat Abu Sinaan Duwali رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ who was a Sahabi reports that he saw Hadhrat Ammaar bin Yaasir رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ call to his slave to bring him something to drink. The slave brought a cup of milk, which Hadhrat Ammaar رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ drank. He then said, "Rasulullaah ﷺ has spoken the truth. Today I shall meet my beloved friends, Muhammad ﷺ and his companions." The rest of the Hadith follows. (3)

Hadhrat Ibraheem bin Abdur Rahmaan bin Auf رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ narrates that during the Battle of Siffeen, which was the day when Hadhrat Ammaar bin Yaasir رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ was martyred, he heard Hadhrat Ammaar رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ call out, "I am to meet Al Jabbaar (Allaah) and marry the damsels of Jannah! Today I shall meet my beloved friends, Muhammad ﷺ and his companions because Rasulullaah ﷺ informed me that the last provision of my worldly life shall be the curds of milk." (4)

(1) Sayf bin Umar, as quoted in *Al Bidaaya wan Nihaaya* (Vol.7 Pg.11).

(2) Tabraani and Abu Ya'la. Haythami (Vol.9 Pg.297) has commented on the chain of narrators.

(3) Tabraani, narrating from reliable sources as confirmed by Haythami (Vol.9 Pg.298).

(4) Tabraani. Haythami (Vol.9 Pg.296) has commented on the chain of narrators and stated that a narration of Imaam Ahmad states that when the milk was brought to Hadhrat Ammaar bin Yaasir رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ, he laughed.

## The Martyrdom of Hadhrat Baraa bin Maalik

### رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ in Persia

Hadhrt Anas رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ narrates, "I came to (my brother) Baraa bin Maalik رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ while he was singing something. I said, 'Allaah has given you something (the Qur'aan) that is better (than the poems you sing).' He replied, 'Do you fear that I shall die on my bed? Never! I swear by Allaah that He will never deprive me (of martyrdom). I have already killed a hundred Kuffaar apart from those whom I killed with the help of others.'" (1)

Another narration states that when the Muslims retreated during the Battle of Aqaba in Persia, Hadhrt Baraa bin Maalik رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ stood up and mounted his horse as another person guided it from behind. He then said to his companions, "Terrible is the habit that you people have made the enemy accustomed to (by being repeatedly defeated)!" He then led the attack against the enemy and Allaah gave victory to the Muslims. It was on that day that Hadhrt Baraa رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ was martyred. (2)

## The Thoughts of Hadhrt Umar رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ when Hadhrt Uthmaan bin Madh'oon رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ Passed Away without being Martyred

Hadhrt Ubaydullaah bin Abdullaah bin Utba رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ says that the news reached him that Hadhrt Umar bin Khattaab رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ said, "When Uthmaan bin Madh'oon رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ died naturally without being martyred, his status dropped in my eyes. I said to myself, 'Look at this man who was extremely abstinent from the world and then passed away without being martyred!' Uthmaan رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ stayed in this position in my estimation until Rasulullaah ﷺ passed away. I then said, 'Shame on me! Even the best of people pass away naturally.' When Abu Bakr رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ passed away naturally, I said, 'Shame on me! Even the best of us pass away naturally.' The status of Uthmaan bin Madh'oon رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ was then restored to the position it previously enjoyed in my sight." (3)

## The Bravery of the Sahabah رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُمْ

### The Bravery of Hadhrt Abu Bakr Siddeeq رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ

Hadhrt Ali رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ once asked, "O people! Who is the bravest person?" "You are, O Ameerul Mu'mineen," the people submitted. Hadhrt Ali رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ then said, "Although I have defeated everyone who has confronted me, I want you people to tell me who is the bravest person." "Who then?" the people said, "Who is the bravest person?" Hadhrt Ali رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ replied, "He was Abu Bakr رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ. We had constructed a shed for Rasulullaah ﷺ during the Battle of Badr and then asked

(1) Baghawi, as quoted in *Isaaba* (Vol.1 Pg.143) from reliable sources as confirmed by Haythami (Vol.9 Pg.324). Haakim (Vol.3 Pg.291) and Abu Nu'aym in his *Hilya* (Vol.1 Pg.350) have also reported the narration.

(2) Haakim.

(3) Ibn Sa'd and Abu Ubayd in his *Ghareeb*, as quoted *Muntakhab* (Vol.5 Pg.240).

who would remain with Rasoolullah ﷺ so that the Mushrikeen do not attack him. (Hadhrat Abu Bakr رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ volunteered for the task when all others were unable to.) By Allaah! Whenever a Mushrik even drew close to us Abu Bakr رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ was there with his sword drawn near the head side of Rasoolullah ﷺ. He attacked anyone who dared attack Rasoolullah ﷺ. He was certainly the bravest of people." (1)

## The Bravery of Hadhrat Umar bin Khattaab رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ

Hadhrat Ali bin Abi Taalib رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ says, "I know of no person who did not make Hijrah secretly except for Umar bin Khattaab رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ. When he decided to make Hijrah, he hung his sword from his neck, carried his bow on his shoulder and took a few arrows in his hand. He then proceeded to the Kabah where the leaders of the Quraysh were sitting in their gatherings. He went around the Kabah seven times and then performed two Rakaahs salaah by the Maqaam Ibraheem. Thereafter, he approached each gathering separately, saying, "May your faces be disfigured! Whoever wants his mother to mourn him, his children to become orphans and his wife to become a widow should meet me behind this valley (to try and stop my Hijrah)." None dared follow him out." (2)

## The Bravery of Hadhrat Ali bin Abi Taalib رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ

### The Poem of Hadhrat Ali رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ after the Battle of Uhud

Hadhrat Jaabir رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ narrates that after the Battle of Uhud, Hadhrat Ali رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ came home to Hadhrat Faatima رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهَا and said the following couplets (which meant):

*"O Faatima! Take this flawless sword from me  
I am neither shaken (with fear) nor a worthless man  
By my life! I have truly exerted myself to assist Muhammad ﷺ  
and for the pleasure of my Rabb Who has complete knowledge about His  
bondsmen"*

Rasoolullah ﷺ then said, "If you think that you fought well, so have Sahal bin Hunayf and Ibn Simma." Rasoolullah ﷺ also mentioned the name of a third Sahabi رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ whose name a narrator called Mu'alla had forgotten. Hadhrat Jibra'eel رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ commented, "O Muhammad ﷺ! I swear by your father that this is certainly an occasion of grief." Rasoolullah ﷺ said, "O Jibra'eel! He (Hadhrat Ali رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ) is from me." To this, Hadhrat Jibra'eel رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ said, "And I am from the two of you (with you two always)." (3)

~~~~~

Hadhrat Abdullaah bin Abbaas رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ narrates that after the Battle of Uhud, Hadhrat Ali رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ came home to Hadhrat Faatima رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهَا and said, "O

(1) Bazzaar, as quoted *Majma'uz Zawaa'id* (Vol.9 Pg.46).

(2) Ibn Asaakir, as quoted in *Muntakhab Kanzul Ummaal* (Vol.4 Pg.387).

(3) Bazzaar. Haythami (Vol.6 Pg. 122) has commented on the chain of narrators.

Faaitima! Take this flawless sword from me." Rasulullaah ﷺ then said, "If you think that you fought well, so have Sahal bin Hunayf and Abu Dujaana Simaak bin Harasha." (1)

## Hadhrat Ali ﷺ Kills Amr bin Abd Wadd

Hadhrat Ubaydullaah bin Ka'b bin Maalik ﷺ says that during the Battle of Khandaq, Amr bin Abd Wadd donned himself recognisable so that his presence should be noticed by also bringing a flag in his hand. As he stood with his horse, Hadhrat Ali ﷺ asked, "O Amr! Did you make a pledge to the Quraysh in Allaah's name that if anyone called you to accept two matters, you would surely accept one of them?" "I certainly have," replied Amr. Hadhrat Ali ﷺ continued, "I then call you towards Allaah, His Rasool ﷺ and towards Islaam." "I have no need for that!" retorted Amr. "Then," said Hadhrat Ali ﷺ, "I challenge you to dismount and fight me on the battlefield." Amr responded by saying, "Why, O nephew? By Allaah, I would not like to kill you." Hadhrat Ali ﷺ then incensed Amr by smirking, "However, I swear by Allaah that I would like to kill you." At this, Amr stormed forward. Both men dismounted their animal, circled the battlefield and started a furious duel. Hadhrat Ali ﷺ then killed Amr. (2)

## The Couplets Hadhrat Ali ﷺ Recited when he Killed Amr bin Abd Wadd

A narration of Ibn Is'haaq states that Amr bin Abd Wadd was covered in armour when he stepped forward and called, "Who will fight me?" Hadhrat Ali bin Abi Taalib ﷺ stood up and said, "I shall accept the challenge, O Nabi of Allaah ﷺ." Rasulullaah ﷺ said, "That is Amr. Be seated." Amr then called out again saying, "Is there nobody to fight me?" He then started making fun of the Muslims by saying, "Where is that Jannah of yours about which you claim that anyone killed from you will enter? Can you not send even one man to fight me?" Hadhrat Ali ﷺ again stood up and volunteered for the task. However, Rasulullaah ﷺ again bade him to be seated. When Amr pronounced his challenge for the third time and also recited some poetry (to ridicule the Muslims), Hadhrat Ali ﷺ got up and said, "O Rasulullaah ﷺ! I shall do it." "But that is Amr," cautioned Rasulullaah ﷺ. Hadhrat Ali ﷺ replied, "(I am prepared to fight) Even though it is Amr." With the permission of Rasulullaah ﷺ, Hadhrat Ali ﷺ walked towards Amr with the following couplets on his lips (which meant):

"Do not be hasty because coming your way  
*is a respondent to your challenge who is not at all helpless*  
*He comes with true resolve and foresight*  
*For it is truth that brings salvation to every successful person*  
*I have great hope of setting on you*  
*Women who wail over the bodies of the dead*

(1) Tabraani, narrating from reliable sources, as confirmed by Haythami (Vol.6 Pg.123).

(2) Ibn Jareer, as quoted in *Kanzul Ummaal* (Vol.5 Pg.281).

*Using such a powerful strike of the sword  
That will be spoken about in all battles"*

"Who are you?" Amr asked. "I am Ali," came the reply. "The son of Abd Manaaf?" asked Amr. Hadhrat Ali ﷺ replied, "I am Ali the son of Abu Taalib." Amr said, "Dear nephew! Have you any uncles who are elder than you, (rather send them to fight me) for I do not like to spill your blood." Hadhrat Ali ﷺ remarked, "However, I swear by Allaah that I would love to spill your blood." Amr flew into a rage at this. He dismounted from his animal and drew his sword which appeared to be a spark of fire. He then stormed angrily at Hadhrat Ali ﷺ, who faced him with his leather shield.

Amr struck the shield with such force that the sword cut right through it and injured Hadhrat Ali ﷺ's head. Hadhrat Ali ﷺ then struck an artery of Amr's shoulder so forcefully that Amr fell to the ground. Dust then began to fly and when Rasulullaah ﷺ heard "Allaahu Akbar", the Sahabah ﷺ knew that Hadhrat Ali ﷺ had killed Amr. Hadhrat Ali ﷺ then recited the following couplets which meant:

*"Will a band of horsemen launch a surprise attack against me?*

*O my companions, retreat and leave them to me*

*Today my anger prevents me from fleeing from the battlefield*

*As did the unmistakable strike of a sword to my head"*

*He concluded with a few verses that meant:*

*"By his foolish judgement, he worshipped stones*

*while by my correct judgement, I worship the Rabb of Muhammad ﷺ*

*When I returned, I left him lying on the ground*

*Like a fallen trunk of a palm lying somewhere between sand dunes and higher ground*

*I preserved my dignity by not taking his clothes*

*But had I been the one to fall, he would have snatched away all my clothing*

*O coalition of forces! Never think that Allaah will stop assisting*

*His Deen and His Nabi ﷺ "*

Hadhrat Ali ﷺ then went to Rasulullaah ﷺ, whose face was gleaming. Hadhrat Umar bin Khattaab ﷺ asked him, "Why did you not take his armour? No Arab has armour better than his." Hadhrat Ali ﷺ replied, "When I struck him with my sword, he used his groin area to shield himself (because of which his private parts became exposed) so I felt too shy for this cousin of mine to take off his armour." (1)

## **Hadhrat Ali ﷺ Kills the Jew Marhab During the Battle of Khaybar**

Hadhrat Salama bin Akwa ﷺ narrates a lengthy Hadith in which he makes mention of the Sahabah ﷺ returning from fighting the Banu Fazaara. They had hardly stayed (in Madinah) for three days when they had to march to

(1) Bayhaqi, as quoted in *Al Bidaaya wan Nihaaya* (Vol.4 Pg.106).

Khaybar. Hadhrat Salama رضي الله عنه says that (his uncle) Hadhrat Aamir رضي الله عنه also left (with the army) as he recited the following couplets (which meant):

"By Allaah! Were it not for You (O Allaah) we would not have received guidance  
Nor would we have given charity or performed salaah  
We can never be independent of Your grace  
So do send tranquillity to us  
And make our feet firm when we clash (with the enemy)"

Rasulullaah ﷺ asked, "Who is saying that?" When the Sahabah رضي الله عنهم informed Rasulullaah ﷺ that it was Hadhrat Aamir رضي الله عنه, he said, "May your Rabb forgive you." Hadhrat Salama رضي الله عنه says, "Whenever Rasulullaah ﷺ said this to anyone, they were always martyred." Riding his camel, Hadhrat Umar رضي الله عنه commented, "(O Rasulullaah ﷺ!) You should have allowed us to benefit more from Aamir." When the Sahabah رضي الله عنهم reached Khaybar, (one of the bravest Jewish warriors) Marhab came out brandishing his sword and reciting the following couplets (which meant):

*"All of Khaybar knows that I am Marhab  
A well-armed and experienced hero  
(Who thrives) When the leaping flames of war arrive"*

Hadhrt Aamir رضي الله عنه met Marhab's challenge to a duel as he recited the following:

*"All of Khaybar knows that I am Aamir  
A well-armed hero who throws himself in the thick of battle"*

The two men exchanged blows with their swords. When Marhab's sword got stuck in Hadhrt Aamir رضي الله عنه's shield, he attacked Marhab from beneath but his sword accidentally severed an artery in his own arm. This caused the death Hadhrt Aamir رضي الله عنه. Hadhrt Salama رضي الله عنه says that as he was passing by a group of Sahabah رضي الله عنهم, he overheard them say, "All Aamir's deeds have been wasted because he killed himself." Hadhrt Salama رضي الله عنه then went weeping to Rasulullaah ﷺ who asked him what the matter was. Hadhrt Salama رضي الله عنه replied, "They are saying that all the deeds of Aamir are wasted." "Who is saying this?" asked Rasulullaah ﷺ. "A group of your Sahabah رضي الله عنهم," came the reply. Rasulullaah ﷺ then said, "They are wrong. In fact, his reward will be double."

Rasulullaah ﷺ then sent for Hadhrt Ali رضي الله عنه, who was experiencing some pain in his eyes. "Tomorrow," declared Rasulullaah ﷺ, "I shall give this flag to someone who loves Allaah and His Rasool ﷺ." Hadhrt Salama رضي الله عنه says that he was he who led Hadhrt Ali رضي الله عنه to Rasulullaah ﷺ. Rasulullaah ﷺ then applied some of his saliva to Hadhrt Ali رضي الله عنه's eyes, which cured them instantly. He then handed the flag over to Hadhrt Ali رضي الله عنه. (When the battle started) Marhab then again came forward to issue a challenge as he said:

*"All of Khaybar knows that I am Marhab  
A well-armed and experienced hero"*

*(Who thrives) When the leaping flames of war arrive"*

Hadhrat Ali ﷺ stepped forward to accept his challenge as he said:

*"I am the one whose mother calls a lion*

*Like the lion of a terrifying jungle*

*I give the enemy his full measure just like an open scale"*

Hadhrat Ali ﷺ then swung his sword to deliver a blow that decapitated Marhab's head. This led to the conquest of Khaybar. <sup>(1)</sup>

~~~~~

Hadhrat Abu Raafi ﷺ who was the freed slave of Rasulullaah ﷺ narrates that they marched with Hadhrat Ali ﷺ to Khaybar, where Rasulullaah ﷺ sent him ahead with the flag. When Hadhrat Ali ﷺ approached one of the fortresses, the people inside came out to fight him. One of the Jews struck Hadhrat Ali ﷺ's shield, causing it to fall from his hand. Hadhrat Ali ﷺ then ripped off one of the doors of the fortress and used it as a shield. He kept fighting with it in his hand until Allaah gave victory to the Muslims. He then threw it away. Hadhrat Abu Raafi ﷺ says, "I saw myself with a group of seven others of which I was the eighth. Try as we did to turn that door over, we did not succeed." <sup>(2)</sup>

Hadhrat Jaabir ﷺ reports that during the Battle of Khaybar, Hadhrat Ali ﷺ lifted up the door of a fortress, which the Muslims used to climb over the walls. This led to their victory. When the people tried to lift the door afterwards, forty of them were unable to do so. <sup>(3)</sup> Another narration states that seventy men had to exert themselves before they were able to put the door back on its place. <sup>(4)</sup> Yet another narration from Hadhrat Jaabir bin Samura ﷺ states that during the Battle of Khaybar, Hadhrat Ali ﷺ lifted up the door of a fortress, which the Muslims used to climb over the walls. This led to their victory. When the people tried to lift the door afterwards, it took forty of them to do so. <sup>(5)</sup>

### **The Bravery of Hadhrat Talha bin Ubaydillaah ﷺ**

Hadhrat Talha ﷺ reports that during the Battle of Uhud, he recited the following couplets (which meant):

**"We are the protectors of the Ghaalib and Maalik tribes**

*Fighting in defence of our blessed Rasulullaah ﷺ*

*Striking people with our swords on the battlefield for him*

*As we strike the hump of a large-humped camel (when cleaning it after*

(1) Muslim and Bayhaqi, as quoted in *Al Bidaaya wan Nihaaya* (Vol.4 Pg.187). This narration therefore makes it clear that it was Hadhrat Ali ﷺ who killed Marhab. A narration from Imaam Ahmad confirms this when it quotes that Hadhrat Ali ﷺ said, "After killing Marhab, I brought his head to Rasulullaah ﷺ." However, Moosa bin Aqaba narrates that it was Hadhrat Muhammad bin Maslama ﷺ who killed Marhab. The same has been reported by Muhammad bin Is'haaq and Waaqidi from Hadhrat Jaabir ﷺ and others.

(2) The chain of narrators in this narration is flawed and clearly broken.

(3) Bayhaqi and Haakim. The chain of narrators in this narration is weak.

(4) *Al Bidaaya wan Nihaaya* (Vol.4 Pg.189). The chain of narrators in this narration is also weak.

(5) Ibn Abi Shayba, as quoted in *Muntakhab Kanzul Ummaal* (Vol.5 Pg.44). The chain of narrators in this narration is reliable.

*slaughtering)"*

As the Muslims were leaving Uhud, Rasulullaah ﷺ told (the famous poet) Hadhrat Hassaan ﷺ to say something in praise of Hadhrat Talha ﷺ. He obliged by saying the following couplets (which meant):

**"On the day of the valley (the Battle of Uhud), Talha assisted Muhammad ﷺ**  
*During a time of extreme hardships and difficulties*  
*With his bare hands he shielded (Rasulullaah ﷺ) from the arrows*  
*And placed his hand beneath the swords (to shield Rasulullaah ﷺ) because of*  
*which it was paralysed*

*After Muhammad ﷺ, he led all the others*  
*He erected the mill of Islaam until it could function by itself"*

Hadhrat Abu Bakr ﷺ then recited the following (which meant):

*"Talha defended the Nabi of guidance as the cavalry chased him*  
*When they eventually caught up, he defended all of Deen*  
*He patiently bore the injuries when his comrades had left*  
*At that time, people were either rightly guided or misguided*  
*O Talha bin Ubaydillaah! Incumbent for you*  
*is the gardens of Jannah and marriage to its beautiful wide-eyed damsels"*

Hadhrat Umar ﷺ then said the following couplet (in praise of Hadhrat Talha ﷺ):

**"He defended the Nabi of guidance with his drawn sword**  
*at a time when everyone had fled and dispersed"*

Rasulullaah ﷺ then commented, "What you have said is true, O Umar." (1) The manner in which Hadhrat Talha ﷺ fought during the Battle of Uhud has already been narrated (in the chapter "Rasulullaah ﷺ Endures Hardship and Difficulty when Giving Da'wah towards Allaah" under the subheading "The Hardship Rasulullaah ﷺ Bore During the Battle of Uhud").

## **The Bravery of Hadhrat Zubayr bin Awwaam**

### **Hadhrat Zubayr , Emerges with a Drawn Sword in Makkah before the Hijrah**

Hadhrat Sa'eed bin Musayyib ﷺ says that the first person to draw a sword for the pleasure of Allaah was Hadhrat Zubayr bin Awwaam ﷺ. He was in Makkah one day when he heard that Rasulullaah ﷺ was assassinated. He immediately left home with a drawn sword when he came face-to-face with Rasulullaah ﷺ. Rasulullaah ﷺ enquired, "What is the matter, Zubayr?" "I heard that you had been assassinated," he replied. "What were intending to do in that case?" Rasulullaah ﷺ asked. "By Allaah!" replied Hadhrat Zubayr ﷺ, "I had intended to tackle all the people of Makkah." Rasulullaah ﷺ then prayed for him. It is with reference to this that Asadi said the following poem (which meant):

(1) Ibn Asaakir, as quoted in *Muntakhab Kanzul Ummaal* (Vol.5 Pg.68) with commentary on the chain of narrators. Ibn Hibbaan has also reported the narration, as quoted in *Lisaan* (Vol.3 Pg.77).

"That was the first sword drawn for the pleasure of Allaah

The sword of the beloved leader Zubayr رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ

In the defence of Deen, it happened by the grace of his courage

It occasionally happens that one who hears a lot musters many forms of courage"<sup>(1)</sup>

Hadhrat Urwa رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ narrates that after accepting Islaam, Hadhrat Zubayr bin Awwaam رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ once heard a whisper from Shaytaan stating that Rasulullaah ﷺ had been captured. Although he was only a boy of twelve years, he drew his sword and searched the gullies of Makkah. At that time, Rasulullaah ﷺ was in the upper area of Makkah when Hadhrat Zubayr رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ met him with sword in hand. Rasulullaah ﷺ enquired, "What is the matter?" "I heard that you had been captured," he replied. "What were intending to do in that case?" Rasulullaah ﷺ asked. Hadhrat Zubayr رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ replied, "I had intended to use this sword on whoever it was who captured you." Rasulullaah ﷺ then prayed for Hadhrat Zubayr رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ and for his sword and told him that he could leave. His was the first sword drawn in the path of Allaah. <sup>(2)</sup>

### Hadhrat Zubayr رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ Kills Talha Abdari During the Battle of Uhud

Ibn Is'haaq narrates that Talha bin Abu Talha Abdari bore the flag of the Mushrikeen during the Battle of Uhud. When he called for someone to challenge him to a duel, the Muslims hesitated. The only person to accept the challenge was Hadhrat Zubayr bin Awwaam رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ. Hadhrat Zubayr رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ leapt on to Talha's own camel, threw him off and killed him with his own sword. In praise of him, Rasulullaah ﷺ said, "Every Nabi has a devoted friend in Jannah and mine shall be Zubayr." Rasulullaah ﷺ also said, "Had Zubayr not accepted the challenge, I would have done so myself after seeing the hesitance of the others." <sup>(3)</sup>

### Hadhrat Zubayr رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ Kills Naufal Makhzoomi and Another Person

Ibn Is'haaq narrates that during the Battle of Khandaq, Naufal bin Abdullaah bin Mughiera Makhzoomi stepped ahead of the ranks of the Mushrikeen and issued a challenge for someone to fight him. Hadhrat Zubayr bin Awwaam رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ responded and struck Naufal so forcefully with his sword that Naufal's body was split into two and Hadhrat Zubayr's sword was dented. Hadhrat Zubayr رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ then returned reciting the following couplets (which meant):

"I am a man who defends himself and also defends

The chosen and unlettered Nabi"<sup>(4)</sup>

(1) Ibn Asaakir.

(2) Ibn Asaakir and Abu Nu'aym in his *Hilya* (Vol.1 Pg.89), as quoted in Mutakhab *Kanzul Ummaal* (Vol.5 Pg.69). The narration has also been reported by Zubayr bin Bakkaar as quoted in *Isaaba* (Vol.1 Pg.545) and by Abu Nu'aym in his *Dalaa'il* (Pg.226).

(3) Yunus, as quoted in *Al Bidaaya wan Nihaaya* (Vol.4 Pg.20).

(4) Yunus, as quoted in *Al Bidaaya wan Nihaaya* (Vol.4 Pg.107).

Hadhrat Asmaa bint Abu Bakr رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهَا narrates that a fully-armed man from the Mushrikeen advanced (from the ranks of the enemy) and climbed on top of a high place. He then announced, "Who will come out for a challenge?" Rasulullaah ﷺ asked one of the Sahabah رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُمْ, "Will you take him on?" "If it pleases you, O Rasulullaah ﷺ," the man replied. When Hadhrat Zubayr رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ started peering to look, Rasulullaah ﷺ noticed him and said, "Stand up, O son of Safiyya!" Hadhrat Zubayr رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ then walked up to the man until he stood level to him. The two men started exchanging blows with their swords, after which one of them grabbed the other in a bear hug. They both then started rolling down. Rasulullaah ﷺ commented, "Whichever of them first falls into the ditch will be killed." Rasulullaah ﷺ and the Sahabah رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُمْ then started making du'aa. It was the Kaafir who landed first in the ditch. As soon as this happened, Hadhrat Zubayr رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ fell on to the Kaafir's chest and killed him. (1)

## Hadhrat Zubayr رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ Fights During the Battles of Khandaq and Yarmook

Hadhrat Abdullaah bin Zubayr رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ says, "During the Battle of Khandaq, myself and Umar bin Abu Salama were put with the women and children in a fortress (because we were both very young). He would bend over for me to get on to his back so that I could watch (the battle). I watched my father (Hadhrat Zubayr رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ) sometimes fighting here, sometimes there and tackling anyone that confronted him. When he came to us in the fortress that evening, I said to him, 'Dear father, I watched you today and saw what you were doing.' 'Did you really see me?' he asked. 'I sure did,' I replied. He then said, 'May my parents be sacrificed for you.'" (2)

Hadhrat Urwa رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ says that during the Battle of Yarmook, the Sahabah رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُمْ said to Hadhrat Zubayr رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ, "Will you not lead an attack so that we may join you?" Hadhrat Zubayr رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ said to them, "If I lead the attack, you will fail in your word (to fight with me)." "We will not," they assured him. Hadhrat Zubayr رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ then attacked the enemy so fiercely that he penetrated past their ranks without the support of anyone else. However, as he returned, the enemy grabbed the reins of his horse and inflicted two wounds on his shoulder on either side of the wound that he sustained during the Battle of Badr.

Hadhrat Urwa رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ says that (the wounds were so deep that) as a child he used to playfully put his finger into those wounds. With Hadhrat Zubayr رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ on that day was his son Abdullaah who was only ten years of age. Hadhrat Zubayr رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ put Hadhrat Abdullaah رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ on a horse and left him in the care of one of the men. (3)

Another narration states that when the Sahabah رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُمْ approached Hadhrat Zubayr رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ with the same request a second time, he complied and did as he

(1) Ibn Jareer, as quoted in *Muntakhab Kanzul Ummaal* (Vol.5 Pg.69).

(2) Bayhaqi, as quoted in *Al Bidaaya wan Nihaaya* (Vol.4 Pg.107).

(3) Bukhari.

had done the first time. (1)

## The Bravery of Hadhrat Sa'd bin Abi Waqqaas رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ

### Hadhrat Sa'd رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ is the First Person to Fire an Arrow in the Path of Allaah

Hadhrt Zuhri reports that Rasulullaah ﷺ once sent an expedition to a place called Raabigh that was situated on one end of Hijaz. Hadhrt Sa'd bin Abi Waqqaas رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ was also part of this expedition. When the Mushrikeen attacked the Muslims, Hadhrt Sa'd رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ defended them with his arrows and was the first person to fire an arrow in the path of Allaah. This was the first battle fought in Islaam. Concerning his archery, Hadhrt Sa'd bin Abi Waqqaas رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ recited the following couplets (which meant):

*"Behold! Has the news reached Rasulullaah ﷺ yet  
that I have defended my companions with my arrowheads?  
Using them, I made the enemy flee  
over every type of ground, hard and soft  
No archer fighting the enemy can be counted  
Who has fired an arrow before me, O Rasulullaah ﷺ"* (2)

### Hadhrt Sa'd bin Abi Waqqaas رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ Kills Three People with a Single Arrow During the Battle of Uhud

Hadhrt Ibn Shihaab narrates that Hadhrt Sa'd bin Abi Waqqaas رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ killed three people with a single arrow during the Battle of Uhud. When the Mushrikeen first shot the arrow at the Muslims, Hadhrt Sa'd رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ shot it back at them (killing one of them). When the Mushrikeen again fired the same arrow back, Hadhrt Sa'd رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ shot it back at them a second time, killing another man. When the arrow came back, Hadhrt Sa'd رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ fired it back at them a third time, taking the life of yet another Mushrik. Everyone was astonished by what Hadhrt Sa'd رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ had done. He said to them, "The arrow was handed to me by none other than Nabi ﷺ." Rasulullaah ﷺ said to him, "May my parents be sacrificed for you." (3)

Hadhrt Abdullaah bin Mas'ood رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ says that during the Battle of Badr, Hadhrt Sa'd bin Abi Waqqaas رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ fought with Rasulullaah ﷺ in the roles of both cavalry and infantry (according to another interpretation, although Hadhrt Sa'd رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ was part of the infantry, he fought as efficiently as a cavalrman). (4)

(1) *Al Bidaaya wan Nihaaya* (Vol.7 Pg.11).

(2) Ibn Asaakir, as quoted in *Muntakhab Kanzul Ummaal* (Vol.5 Pg.72).

(3) Ibn Asaakir, as quoted in *Muntakhab Kanzul Ummaal* (Vol.5 Pg.72).

(4) Bazaar. Haythami (Vol.6 Pg.82) has commented on the chain of narrators.

## The Bravery of Hadhrat Hamza bin Abdil Muttalib رَوَى اللَّهُ تَعَالَى عِنْدَهُ

### His Bravery During the Battle of Badr and the Statement of Umayyah bin Khalaf in this Regard

Hadhrat Haarith Taymi narrates that during the Battle of Badr, Hadhrat Hamza bin Abdil Muttalib رَوَى اللَّهُ تَعَالَى distinguished himself by wearing ostrich feathers. One of the Mushrikeen asked, "Who is the man who marks himself with ostrich feathers?" "He is Hamza bin Abdil Muttalib," came the reply. The man then commented, "It was he who carried out all those major offensives against us." (1) Hadhrat Abdur Rahmaan bin Auf رَوَى اللَّهُ تَعَالَى says that Umayyah bin Khalaf once asked him, "O Abdul Ilaa! Who was the man who marked his chest with ostrich feathers during the Battle of Badr?" "He was the uncle of Rasulullaah ﷺ. He was Hamza bin Abdil Muttalib," replied Hadhrat Abdur Rahmaan bin Auf رَوَى اللَّهُ تَعَالَى. Umayyah then commented, "It was he who carried out all those major offensives against us." (2)

### Rasulullaah ﷺ Weeps Bitterly as he Sees the Dead Body of Hadhrat Hamza رَوَى اللَّهُ تَعَالَى عِنْدَهُ

Hadhrat Jaabir bin Abdullaah رَوَى اللَّهُ تَعَالَى narrates that as they were returning from the Battlefield of Uhud, Rasulullaah ﷺ could not find Hadhrat Hamza رَوَى اللَّهُ تَعَالَى. Someone said, "I saw him by that tree as he was saying, 'I am the lion of Allaah and the lion of His Rasool ﷺ. O Allaah! I absolve myself from what those people (Abu Sufyaan and the others) have done and I seek pardon from what these people (the Muslims) have done (by causing their own defeat).'" Rasulullaah ﷺ went in that direction and started crying when he caught sight of Hadhrat Hamza's forehead. However, when Rasulullaah ﷺ saw how the body of Hadhrat Hamza رَوَى اللَّهُ تَعَالَى was mutilated, he wept uncontrollably. Rasulullaah ﷺ then asked, "Is there no Kafan (burial shroud)?" One of the Ansaar stood up and threw a cloth over the body. Thereafter, Rasulullaah ﷺ said, "In the sight of Allaah, Hamza shall be the leader of all martyrs on the Day of Qiyaamah." (3)

### The Martyrdom and Mutilation of Hadhrat Hamza رَوَى اللَّهُ تَعَالَى عِنْدَهُ

Hadhrat Ja'far bin Amr bin Umayyah Dhamri says that it was during the Khilaafah of Hadhrat Mu'aawiyah رَوَى اللَّهُ تَعَالَى when he and Hadhrat Abdullaah bin Adi bin Khiyaar went out. He then goes on to report a lengthy narration in which he states that when the two of them sat before Hadhrat Wahshi رَوَى اللَّهُ تَعَالَى, they asked, "We have come here so that you may relate to us how you managed to martyr Hadhrat Hamza رَوَى اللَّهُ تَعَالَى." He responded by saying, "I shall relate the incident to you as I had related it to Rasulullaah ﷺ when he asked me about it. I had been

(1) Tabraani. Haythami (Vol.6 Pg.81) has commented on the chain of narrators.

(2) Bazaar, Haythami (Vol.6 Pg.81) has commented on the chain of narrators.

(3) Haakim (Vol.3 Pg.199) narrating from reliable sources, as confirmed by Dhahabi.

a slave of Jubayr bin Mut'im, whose uncle Tu'ayma bin Adi was killed in the Battle of Badr. When the Quraysh marched to Uhud, Jubayr said to me, 'You will be a free man if you manage to kill Hamza the uncle of Rasulullaah ﷺ to compensate for the death of my uncle.'

I was an Abyssinian man who could throw the spear with the accuracy of the Abyssinians. I seldom ever missed a target. I therefore marched with the others and when we engaged the Muslims in battle, I set out to locate Hamza ﷺ. I searched for him until I eventually saw him at one end of the army. (With his brawny body covered in dust) He looked like a brown camel, smashing people with his sword so fiercely that nothing could stand before him. By Allaah! I prepared well for him and hid myself behind a tree or a rock until he drew close to me. However, Sibaa bin Abdul Uzza beat me to him. When Hamza ﷺ saw Sibaa, he called to him, "Come to me, O son of a circumcised woman!" Hamza ﷺ then struck Sibaa so forcefully that his head was taken off as if by mistake. I then shook my spear until I was satisfied (that it would hit the target) and then let it fly. The spear struck him beneath the navel and penetrated his body until it emerged from between his legs. He started to come to me, but fell unconscious. I then left him like that until he passed away. I later returned, took my spear and returned to the camp. I then sat there because I had no need for anything else. I had killed Hamza ﷺ only to secure my freedom. I then returned to Makkah and was set free.

I remained there until Rasulullaah ﷺ conquered Makkah, after which I escaped to Taa'if. I stayed there until the time when a delegation from Taa'if went to Rasulullaah ﷺ to accept Islaam. All avenues were then shut for me and I thought, 'Should I go to Shaam, to Yemen or someplace else?' By Allaah! I was still engrossed in these thoughts, when someone said to me, 'Shame on you! (Do you still not know that) Muhammad ﷺ never kills anyone who enters his Deen and recites the Shahaadah of truth.' I then set out until I reached Rasulullaah ﷺ in Madinah. (Rasulullaah ﷺ had no idea of my arrival and) Nothing warned him of my presence besides me standing over his head reciting the Shahaadah of truth. When he saw me, Rasulullaah ﷺ asked, 'Are you Wahshi?' 'Yes, O Rasulullaah ﷺ,' I replied. He then said to me, 'Sit down and tell me how you managed to kill Hamza ﷺ.'

I then related the incident to Rasulullaah ﷺ as I have related it to you. Once I had completed the narration, Rasulullaah ﷺ said to me, '**Hide your face from me so that I do not have to see you (do not let me see you because it reminds me of my uncle's death).**' I would then avoid the places where Rasulullaah ﷺ was so that he did not have to look at me. I continued doing this until Allaah took the life of Rasulullaah ﷺ.

When the Muslims marched to fight the great liar Musaylama from Yamaamah, I marched with them. I took along with me the same spear I had used to martyr Hamza ﷺ. The battle then began. Although I never knew him (from before), I recognised Musaylama standing with sword in hand. As I prepared to kill him,

someone from the Ansaar was also preparing to kill him from another direction. I then shook my spear until I was satisfied (that it would hit the target) and then let it fly. As the spear struck him, the Ansaari attacked him and struck him with his sword. Only your Rabb knows which of us had killed him. If I had killed him, then although I had martyred the best of people after Rasulullaah ﷺ (Hamza رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ), I had also killed the worst of people (Musaylama)." (1)

A similar narration of Bukhari also narrated by Hadhrat Ja'far bin Amr adds that when the armies formed their rows for the battle, Sibaa stepped forward and said, "Is there anyone to fight me?" Hadhrat Hamza bin Abdil Muttalib رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ accepted the challenge and said, "O Sibaa! O son of Ummu Anmaar the circumcised woman! Do you oppose Allaah and His Rasool ﷺ?" He then attacked Sibaa (and finished him off so thoroughly) as if he was a bygone day.

## The Bravery of Hadhrat Abbaas bin Abdul Muttalib رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ

### Hadhrat Abbaas رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ Snatches Hadhrat Handhala رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ from the Hands of the Mushrikeen

Hadhrot Jaabir رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ narrates that during the Battle of Taa'if, Rasulullaah ﷺ sent Hadhrot Handhala bin Rabee رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ to the people of Taa'if. However, when Hadhrot Handhala رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ had spoken to them, they captured him and were taking him up to their fortress when Rasulullaah ﷺ called out, "Who will take care of them (and rescue Hadhrot Handhala رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ)? Such a person will receive the reward of this entire expedition." It was only Hadhrot Abbaas رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ who rose to the occasion. He intercepted the enemy as they were taking Hadhrot Handhala رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ into the fortress. Hadhrot Abbaas رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ was a powerful man and he wrestled Hadhrot Handhala رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ from them until he was able to snatch him away from their hands. Rasulullaah ﷺ prayed for him all the time and he brought Hadhrot Handhala رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ to Rasulullaah ﷺ despite the rocks that the people in the fortress rained down on him. (2)

## The Bravery of Hadhrot Mu'aadh bin Amr bin Jamooh رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ and Hadhrot Mu'aadh bin Afraa رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ

### How they Killed Abu Jahal During the Battle of Badr

Hadhrot Abdur Ramaan bin Auf رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ says, "As I stood in file during the Battle of Badr, I looked to my right and left and saw two boys from the Ansaar who were very young in age. I was hoping that I had rather been between two stronger men, when one of them nudged me saying, 'Dear uncle! Do you know

(1) Ibn Is'haaq, as quoted in *Al Bidaaya wan Nihaaya* (Vol.4 Pg.18).

(2) Ibn Asaakir, as quoted in *Kanzul Ummaal* (Vol.5 Pg.307).

who Abu Jahal is?' 'Certainly,' I replied, 'What have you to do with him?' He replied, 'I have been told that he abuses Rasulullaah ﷺ. I swear by the Being Who controls my life that if I see him, I shall not leave him until the first of us dies.' I was very impressed with this. The other boy then nudged me and we had a similar conversation.

No sooner did I spot Abu Jahal doing his rounds amongst his people, when I said to the boys, 'Look over there! There is the man you were asking me about.' The two darted towards him with their swords and struck him until they had killed him. They then went to Rasulullaah ﷺ and reported it to him. When Rasulullaah ﷺ asked them which of them killed Abu Jahal, they both claimed to have done so. 'Have you wiped your swords yet?' Rasulullaah ﷺ asked. 'No,' they replied. Rasulullaah ﷺ then examined their swords and said, 'You have both killed him.' Rasulullaah ﷺ however decided to award Abu Jahal's possessions to Hadhrat Mu'aadh bin Amr bin Jamooh ﷺ. The other youngster was Hadhrat Mu'aadh bin Afraa ﷺ.<sup>(1)</sup>

Another narration from Bukhari quotes that Hadhrat Abdur Ramaan bin Auf ﷺ said, "I was standing in the rows during the Battle of Badr and happened to look to my right and my left when I noticed two youngsters on either side. I began to feel unsafe in my position when one of them addressed me in a manner that the other should be unaware of. He requested, 'Dear uncle! Do show me who Abu Jahal is?' 'Dear nephew,' I asked, 'What will you do about him?' He responded by saying, 'I have taken a pledge with Allaah that as soon as I see him, I will either kill him or I shall be killed in the attempt.' Thereafter, the second youngster also had a similar conversation with me that the first was unaware of. (Impressed by their courage) I then did not want to be between any other men other than them. When I pointed Abu Jahal out to them, they attacked him like two peregrine falcons and struck him with their swords. They were the two sons of Afraa (Mu'aadh and Mu'awwadh. Hadhrat Mu'aadh bin Amr bin Jamooh ﷺ was most probably with them).

Hadhrot Abdullaah bin Abbaas ﷺ and Hadhrot Abdullaah bin Abu Bakr' ﷺ both narrate from Hadhrot Mu'aadh bin Amr bin Jamooh ﷺ of the Banu Salma tribe that he said, "(During the Battle of Badr) Abu Jahal seemed to be in a dense forest (because he was surrounded by soldiers on all sides). The people therefore said that it was impossible for anyone to reach him. No sooner had I heard this, then I resolved to get to him and went in his direction. I attacked him as soon as I got the opportunity and struck him with my sword, causing his foot to fly off from halfway down his calf. By Allaah! The only comparison I can draw of his foot flying off is like a date stone flies off a grindstone when it is thrown against it. Abu Jahal's son Ikrama then struck me on the shoulder. The blow severed my arm and it hung by its skin to my side. The battle occupied me from feeling the pain and I fought most of the day with the arm trailing behind me. However, when it became too cumbersome, I placed

(1) Bukhari, Muslim, Haakim (Vol.3 Pg.425) And Bayhaqi (Vol.6 Pg.305).

my foot on the dangling arm and pulled hard until (the skin gave way and) I could cast the arm aside. (1)

## The Bravery of Hadhrat Abu Dujaana Simaak bin Harasha رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ from the Ansaar

Hadhrat Abu Dujaana رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ Takes a Sword from Rasulullaah ﷺ and Fulfils its Rights During the Battle of Uhud

Hadhrat Anas رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ reports that Rasulullaah ﷺ took hold of a sword during the Battle of Uhud and announced, "Who will take this sword from me?" When several Sahabah رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُمْ took the sword to have a look at it, Rasulullaah ﷺ said, "(I am not giving it for looking) Who will take this sword and fulfil its rights." This made everyone hesitate and it was Hadhrat Abu Dujaana Simaak bin Harasha رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ who said, "I shall take it and fulfil its rights." He then used it to efficiently kill the Mushrikeen. (2)

Hadhrat Zubayr bin Awwaam رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ narrates that that Rasulullaah ﷺ took hold of a sword during the Battle of Uhud and announced, "Who will take this sword and fulfil its rights." It was Hadhrat Abu Dujaana Simaak bin Harasha رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ who said, "O Rasulullaah ﷺ! I shall take it and fulfil its rights, but what are its rights?" Rasulullaah ﷺ then handed the sword over to him and he left. Hadhrat Zubayr رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ says that he followed Hadhrat Abu Dujaana رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ and (saw that) he destroyed everything he used the sword on. He eventually came across some Mushrikeen women at the foot of the mountain. Amongst them was Hind who was reciting the following couplets (to incite the Mushrikeen men, which meant):

*"We are the daughters of prominent people*

*Who walk on exquisite cushions*

*We wear musk on our heads*

*And are ready to embrace you when you arrive*

*We shall however separate from you if you flee the battlefield*

*Separate in a manner after which there shall be no reconciliation"*

When Hadhrat Abu Dujaana رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ intended to attack her (because she was an active participant in the battle), she started calling (for help) to the battlefield. However, no one came to her assistance. He then left her. Hadhrat Zubayr رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ said to him, "I have been extremely impressed by everything I have seen you do besides the fact that you did not kill that woman." Hadhrat Abu Dujaana رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ said, "When no one responded to her call for help, I did not want the sword of Rasulullaah ﷺ to strike a helpless woman." (3)

Hadhrat Zubayr رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ narrates, "During the Battle of Uhud, Rasulullaah ﷺ took hold of a sword and announced, 'Who will take this sword with its rights.' I said, 'I shall, O Rasulullaah ﷺ!' Rasulullaah ﷺ ignored me and again

(1) Ibn Is'haaq, as quoted in *Al Bidaaya wan Nihaaya* (Vol.3 Pg.287).

(2) Ahmad and Muslims, as quoted in *Al Bidaaya wan Nihaaya* (Vol:4 Pg.15). Ibn Sa'd (Vol.3 Pg.101) has also reported the narration.

(3) Bazaar, narrating from reliable sources, as confirmed by Haythami (Vol.6 Pg.109).

announced, 'Who will take this sword with its rights.' Abu Dujaana Simaak bin Harasha ﷺ then responded by saying, 'I shall take it with its rights, O Rasulullaah ﷺ! What are its rights?' Rasulullaah ﷺ replied, '(Its rights are) That you do not use it to kill any Muslim and do not flee the battlefield with it.' Rasulullaah ﷺ then handed the sword over to him. Whenever he intended to fight, he would make himself distinguishable by wearing a (red) bandanna. I said to myself, 'I shall watch him closely today to see what he does.' (I saw that) He destroyed everything he used the sword on..." The rest of the Hadith is similar to the one quoted above. (1)

Hadhrat Zubayr bin Awwaam ﷺ is reported to have said, "I was disappointed when I asked Rasulullaah ﷺ for the sword and he refused to give it to me, giving it to Abu Dujaana ﷺ instead. I said to myself, 'I am the son of his aunt Safiyya and from the Quraysh. However, when I stood up and asked for the sword before Abu Dujaana ﷺ, Rasulullaah ﷺ gave it to him instead of myself! By Allaah! I shall certainly watch him to see how he performs.' I then started following him. When he took out his red bandanna and tied it around his head, the Ansaar said, 'Abu Dujaana ﷺ has taken out his bandanna of death.' This they always said whenever he wore his bandanna. He then left with the following couplets on his lips (which meant):

*'It was with me that my good friend took an undertaking*

*as we stood at the foot of a mountain among the date palms*

*(The undertaking was) That throughout my life I should never stand in the rear end of the battlefield*

*So I shall now be using the sword of Allaah and His Rasool ﷺ (to fight the enemy)'''*

Hadhrat Zubayr ﷺ continues to narrate, "Abu Dujaana ﷺ killed every enemy soldier who confronted him. One of the Mushrikeen was such that (after searching for the wounded Muslims) he did not leave any of them alive. When this Mushrik drew close to Abu Dujaana ﷺ, I prayed to Allaah to let them confront each other. The two men then clashed and exchanged blows with their swords. When the Mushrik struck at Abu Dujaana ﷺ with his sword, Abu Dujaana ﷺ defended himself with his shield, which trapped the sword. Abu Dujaana ﷺ then killed the Mushrik with a single blow. I also saw him raise the sword over the head of Hind bint Utba and then turning the sword away from her. I said, 'Allaah and His Rasool ﷺ know best (who most deserves to be killed by this sword).'" (2)

Hadhrat Moosa bin Uqba narrates that when Rasulullaah ﷺ offered the sword to the Sahabah ﷺ, Hadhrat Umar ﷺ first asked for it. When Rasulullaah ﷺ ignored him, Hadhrat Zubayr bin Awwaam ﷺ asked for it. Rasulullaah ﷺ ignored him as well. The two felt very disappointed about it. When Rasulullaah ﷺ offered it for the third time, Hadhrat Abu Dujaana ﷺ asked to have it. Rasulullaah ﷺ gave it to him and he truly fulfilled

(1) Haakim (Vol.3 Pg.230), narrating from reliable sources, as confirmed by Dhahabi.

(2) Ibn Hishaam, as quoted in *Al Bidaaya wan Nihaaya* (Vol.4 Pg.16).

the rights of that sword.

Hadhrat Ka'b bin Maalik **رضي الله عنه** says, "I was also part of that battle with the Muslims. However, what I saw of the Mushrikeen mutilating the bodies of the Muslims made me stand still in my tracks. When I proceeded ahead, I saw a fully-armed Mushrik passing by the Muslims saying, 'Herd together (to be slaughtered) as goats herd together!' I then noticed that a Muslim wearing a helmet was waiting for the approach of this Mushrik. I went ahead until I stood behind him. I then visually assessed the strength of the Muslim and the Mushrik, arriving at the conclusion that the Mushrik was better armed and better prepared for battle. I then waited until the two men clashed. The Muslim struck the Mushrik so powerfully that after the sword struck the artery of his shoulder, it penetrated through his body and emerged from his posterior. His body was therefore cut into two. The Muslim then removed his helmet and said, 'How was that, Ka'b? I am Abu Dujaana.'" (1)

## The Bravery of Hadhrat Qataadah bin Nu'maan **رضي الله عنه**

### Hadhrat Qataadah bin Nu'maan **رضي الله عنه** Uses his Face to Shield Rasulullaah **ﷺ** from Arrows During the Battle of Uhud

Hadhrat Qataadah bin Nu'maan **رضي الله عنه** narrates, "Rasulullaah **ﷺ** was given a bow as a gift, which he gave to me during the Battle of Uhud. I used it to fire arrows in front of Rasulullaah **ﷺ** until the string broke. I then remained standing where I was, shielding the face of Rasulullaah **ﷺ** with my own. When ever an arrow headed for the face of Rasulullaah **ﷺ**, I turned my head to protect the face of Rasulullaah **ﷺ** for I had no bow to use. The last of the arrows to come was one that caused my eyeball to fall into my hand. I rushed to Rasulullaah **ﷺ** with the eyeball in my palm and when he saw me, tears rolled from his eyes. He then said, 'O Allaah! Qataadah shielded Your Nabi **ﷺ** with his face so make this (injured) eye the better of his two eyes and the one with sharper vision. (After Rasulullaah **ﷺ** placed the eyeball back into its place) The eye did turn out to be the better one and the one with sharper vision.'" (2)

Hadhrat Qataadah **رضي الله عنه** narrates, "During the Battle of Uhud, I was standing in front of Rasulullaah **ﷺ**, shielding Rasulullaah **ﷺ**'s face with my own. Also during the Battle of Uhud, Abu Dujaana Simaak bin Harasha was behind Rasulullaah **ﷺ**, shielding Rasulullaah **ﷺ**'s back with his back until his back was full of arrows." (3)

(1) *Al Bidaaya wan Nihaaya* (Vol.4 Pg.17).

(2) Tabraani. Haythami (Vol.6 Pg.113) has commented on the chain of narrators.

(3) Tabraani. Haythami has commented on the chain of narrators.

## The Bravery of Hadhrat Salama bin Akwa ﷺ

### His Bravery During the Fight at Dhu Qarad

Hadhrt Salama bin Akwa ﷺ narrates, "It was during the period when the Peace Treaty of Hdaybiyyah was being abided by that we returned to Madinah with Rasulullaah ﷺ. Rasulullaah ﷺ's slave Rabaah ﷺ and I then took the camels of Rasulullaah ﷺ (to graze and water) and I also took the horse of Talha bin Ubaydullaah ﷺ to water and graze with the camels. It was during the last vestiges of night that Abdur Rahmaan bin Uyayna (with a band of Mushrikeen) launched an attack and killed the shepherd tending to Rasulullaah ﷺ's camels. He and those with him then started taking the camels away when I said to Rabaah ﷺ, 'Take this horse back to Talha ﷺ and inform Rasulullaah ﷺ that his camels are being stolen.' I then stood on the top a hill facing towards Madinah and thrice shouted, 'Yaà Sabaahaa!' (This was a call for help when under attack from an enemy).

I then chased after them with my sword and arrows. I started shooting arrows at them and hamstringing their animals every time I came by an outcrop of trees. Whenever any rider turned on me, I sat by the roots of a tree and shot an arrow. In this manner, I managed to injure the horse of every rider that approached me. As I fired the arrows, I was chanting the following couplet (which meant):

*'I am the son of Akwa  
and today is the day of (destroying) the wretches'*

When I (on foot) caught up with one of them as he rode, I let fly an arrow. As the arrow struck his leg, I (was so close that I) could almost strike his shoulder when I said:

*'Take that! For I am the son of Akwa  
and today is the day of (destroying) the wretches'*

Whenever I found some trees, I would assault them with my arrows and when a valley narrowed, I would climb to the top and throw stones at them. This is how I kept pursuing them and reciting my couplets until I had recaptured and put behind me every camel of Rasulullaah ﷺ. I then continued shooting arrows at them until, in an effort to lighten themselves, they had thrown off more than thirty spears and more than thirty shawls. Whenever they threw anything down, I placed a stone on it and placed it on the road that Rasulullaah ﷺ would be taking. By midmorning, Uyayna bin Badr Fazaari arrived to reinforce them at a narrow valley. I then climbed to the top of the hill and was high above them.

Uyayna asked them, 'Who is this person I see (chasing you)?' They replied, 'He has given us a difficult time. He has been chasing us from daybreak until now and had taken everything we had and left it behind him.' Uyayna said, 'If he had known that a search party was coming up after him, he would certainly have left you. A few of you will have to get him.' Four of them then stood up and climbed the hill. As soon as they came within earshot, I called out, 'Do you know who I am?' 'Who are you?' they enquired. I responded by saying, 'I am the son of Akwa. I

swear by the Being Who has honoured Muhammad ﷺ that none of you can ever catch me if he chases me whereas he would never escape me if I chase him.' One of them commented, 'I think so too.'

I kept my position there until I saw Rasulullaah ﷺ's riders weaving between the trees. In the lead was Akhram Asadi رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ and close on his heels was Abu Qataada رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ who was Rasulullaah ﷺ's special rider. Behind him was Miqdaad bin Aswad Kindi رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ. The Mushrikeen took flight and I descended from the hill. I grabbed hold of the reins of Akhram رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ's horse and said, 'Beware of them for I fear that they would cut you to pieces. Wait until Rasulullaah ﷺ and his companions arrive.' He said, 'O Salama! If you believe in Allaah and the Last Day and know that Jannah and Jahannam are true, you would not stand between me and martyrdom.' I then let go of his horse's reins and he caught up with Abdur Rahmaan bin Uayyana. Abdur Rahmaan turned to fight him and the two exchanged blows with their spears. As Akhram رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ hamstrung Abdur Rahmaan's horse, Abdur Rahmaan stabbed Akhram رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ and martyred him. Abdur Rahmaan then got on to Akhram رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ's horse just as Abu Qataadah رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ confronted him. When the two started their duel using spears, Abdur Rahmaan hamstrung Abu Qataadah's horse and Abu Qataadah رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ killed Abdur Rahmaan. Abu Qataadah رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ then took Akhram's horse."

Hadhrat Salama bin Akwa رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ continues, "I then started running after the bandits until (we had gone so far that) I could not see the dust of the Sahabah رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُمْ. Just before sunset, they entered a valley where there was a watering place called Dhu Qarad. They had intended to drink some water there but when they saw me in hot pursuit, they abandoned the idea and climbed up the ridge of Dhu Bir. As the sun set, I caught up with one of them and while shooting an arrow at him, I said:

*'Take that! For I am the son of Akwa  
and today is the day of (destroying) the wretches'*

(When the arrow struck him) He groaned, 'If only the mother of Akwa had lost him early in the morning!' 'Is that so, O enemy of himself?' I shouted. He was the same person whom I had shot early that morning. I then fired another arrow at him. Both arrows were now stuck to him. They left behind two horses and I brought them down to Rasulullaah ﷺ who was at the watering place from which I had chased the bandits off, namely Dhu Qarad. Rasulullaah ﷺ was there with five hundred men. Bilaal رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ had slaughtered one of the camels I had left behind and was busy roasting for Rasulullaah ﷺ parts of its liver and hump.

I said, 'O Rasulullaah ﷺ! Allow me to choose a hundred of your companions so that I may capture those Kuffaar at night. I shall not leave any of them to tell the tale. 'Would you really be able to do so, Salama?' asked Rasulullaah ﷺ. 'Certainly, I swear by the Being Who had honoured you!' Rasulullaah ﷺ then smiled so broadly that I could see his molar teeth in the light of the fire. He then said, 'By now they would already be entertained in Banu Ghitfaan territory.' A

man from the Banu Ghitfaan later informed us that some people from the Ghitfaan tribe passed by him and he slaughtered a camel for them. However, they were still busy skinning the animal when they saw a dust trail. They then left the camel as it were and fled for their lives.

The next morning, Rasulullaah ﷺ announced, 'Our best cavalryman is Abu Qataadah and our best infantryman is Salama.' Rasulullaah ﷺ then gave me the share of a cavalryman as well as the share of an infantryman. As we returned to Madinah, Rasulullaah ﷺ seated me behind him on his camel Adhbaa. Eventually all that was left of the journey equalled the distance travelled between sunrise and midmorning. Amongst us was a person from the Ansaari who was undefeated in a road race. He started to announce, 'Is there anyone to race? Will anyone race me to Madinah?' He repeated himself several times as I was seated behind Rasulullaah ﷺ. I said to him, 'Don't you respect any honourable person or fear any respectable person?' The Ansaari said, 'I care for none after Rasulullaah ﷺ.' Thereupon, I said, 'O Rasulullaah ﷺ! May my parents be sacrificed for you! Permit me to race him.' Rasulullaah ﷺ replied, 'If you wish.' I said to the man, 'I am on my way.' He jumped off his camel. I doubled up my legs and also jumped from the camel.

(We then started the race) I initially held myself back for one or two hills (so that he could run ahead) and then I ran faster until I caught up with him and hit my hands between his shoulders. I said something like, 'By Allaah! I have beaten you.' He laughed and said, 'I think so too.' We then reached Madinah." A narration of Muslim adds that Hadhrat Salama رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ said, "I then beat him to Madinah. We had not even stayed three days in Madinah when we marched for Khaybar." (1)

## The Bravery of Hadhrat Abu Hadrad Aslami رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ

### He Fights and Defeats Two Men

Hadhrot Abu Hadrad رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ says, "I married a woman from my tribe and agreed to give her a dowry of two hundred Dirhams. I then approached Rasulullaah ﷺ for some financial assistance for my marriage. 'How much did you agree to pay her as dowry?' asked Rasulullaah ﷺ. 'Two hundred Dirhams,' I replied. 'Subhaanallaah!' exclaimed Rasulullaah ﷺ (thinking it to be too much for someone like myself), 'Had you married any lady from the town, you would not have had to pay so much (they demand higher because she is from your tribe). I swear by Allaah that I have nothing to assist you with.'

I then stayed like that for a few days when a man from the Jusham bin Mu'aawiya tribe arrived with a large group from the Jusham tribe and others and camped at a place called Ghaaba (close to Madinah). His name was either Rifaa'ah bin Qais or Qais bin Rifaa'ah and he was a prominent person amongst the Jusham tribe. His intention was to rally the Qais tribe to fight against Rasulullaah ﷺ. Rasulullaah ﷺ then summoned me and two other Muslims and instructed us

(1) Ahmad, as quoted in *Al Bidaaya wan Nihaaya* (Vol.4 Pg.152).

saying, 'Go to this man and gather any information you can.' Rasulullaah ﷺ then gave us a frail and old camel. When even one of us mounted her, she was unable to stand because of her weakness, it was only with the assistance of several men supporting her from behind that she was able to stand. Rasulullaah ﷺ said, 'You will reach there on her.'

(With the blessing of Rasulullaah ﷺ's du'aa, Allaah gave her the strength and we rode her) We left with our weapons, which included arrows and swords and reached their camp as the sun was setting. As I hid in a corner, I instructed my two companions to hide in another corner of the camp. I then said to them, 'When you hear me shout, 'Allaahu Akbar' as I attack them, you two should also shout 'Allaahu Akbar' and attack with me.' By Allaah! We then sat waiting for an opportunity to attack when they became unmindful. The night covered us until there was only darkness. There was a shepherd of theirs who had gone out to graze the flocks and had not yet returned. They feared for his life and their leader Rifaa'ah bin Qais stood up and hung his sword around his neck. He said, 'By Allaah! I shall find out for sure what has happened to our shepherd. Some harm must have come to him.' A group of his men said, 'Do not go. We shall do it for you.' However, he instructed, 'No! I shall go alone.' 'Let us accompany you,' they appealed. 'No!' he insisted, 'None of you should follow me.'

He then left and passed by me. When I had him perfectly in my sights, I fired an arrow that penetrated his heart. By Allaah! He made not a sound. I then jumped at him and severed his head. I then attacked one end of the camp, calling 'Allaahu Akbar!' My two companions also sprung to the attack shouting 'Allaahu Akbar!' By Allaah! Whoever was there only thought of getting to safety as they called out, 'Save yourselves! Save yourselves!' They made a dash for it, taking with them only their wives and children and the lightest of their possessions. We managed to take a great number of camels and goats, which we brought to Rasulullaah ﷺ. I also took Rifaa'ah's head along with me. Rasulullaah ﷺ gave me thirteen camels from the booty, which I could use for the dowry and to get my wife home." (1)

## The Bravery of Hadhrat Khaalid bin Waleed رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ

### Hadhrot Khaalid رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ Breaks Nine Swords During the Battle of Mu'ta

Hadhrot Khaalid bin Waleed رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ says, "Nine swords broke in my hand during the Battle of Mu'ta. Eventually, it was only a Yemeni sword that remained in my hand." (2)

(1) Ibn Is'haaq, as quoted in *Al Bidaaya wan Nihaaya* (Vol.4 Pg.223). Imaam Ahmad and others have also reported the narration but using the name Hadhrot Abdullaah bin Abu Hadrad رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ (instead of Hadhrot Abu Hadrad رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ), as quoted in *Isaaba* (Vol.2 Pg.295).

(2) Bukhari, as quoted in *Isti'aab* (Vol.1 Pg.408). Haakim (Vol.3 Pg.42) and Ibn Sa'd (Vol.4 Pg.2) have also reported the narration.

## Hadhrat Khaalid رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ kills Hurmuz

Hadhrat Aws bin Haaritha bin Laam رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ narrates, "There was none who hated the (Muslim) Arabs more than Hurmuz. After we had finished fighting Musaylama and his people, we marched towards Basrah. We clashed with Hurmuz with an extremely large army at a place called Kaadhima. Khaalid رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ stepped forward and challenged Hurmuz to a duel. Hurmuz accepted the challenge and Khaalid رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ killed him. When Hadhrat Khaalid رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ wrote to Hadhrat Abu Bakr رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ about this, Hadhrat Abu Bakr رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ awarded Hurmuz's belongings to Hadhrat Khaalid bin Waleed رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ. Hurmuz's crown was valued at a hundred thousand Dirhams because the Persians always gave their leaders crowns valued at a hundred thousand Dirhams." (1)

## Hadhrat Khaalid bin Waleed رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ Weeps as He Passes Away on his Bed

Hadhrat Abu Zinaad narrates that when Hadhrat Khaalid bin Waleed رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ was about to pass away, he started weeping. He named the various battles he had participated in and said, "There is not an area on my body equal to a hand's span that does not have wound inflicted on it either by a sword, a spear or an arrow. However, here I am dying a natural death on my bed like a camel dies. May the eyes of cowards never have any sleep." (2)

## The Bravery of Hadhrat Baraa bin Maalik رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ

Hadhrat Anas رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ reports that during the Battle of Yamaamah, Hadhrat Khaalid bin Waleed رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ said to Hadhrat Baraa bin Maalik رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ, "Stand up, O Baraa!" When Hadhrat Baraa bin Maalik رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ mounted his horse, he praised Allaah and said, "O people of Madinah! There should be no Madinah for you today (you should prepare yourselves to die in Jihaad and not return to Madinah). All that should remain for you should be the One Allaah and Jannah." He then led the attack with the others and the people of Yamaamah were defeated. Hadhrat Baraa bin Maalik رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ encountered (the enemy leader) Mukakkam Yamaamah and floored him with a blow from his sword. He then took Muhakkam's sword and struck him so forcefully that the sword broke. (3) Another narration quotes that Hadhrat Baraa bin Maalik رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ said, "On the day that we fought Musaylama, I encountered a man who was called the donkey of Yamaamah. He was a large and powerfully built man who carried a white sword. When I struck his legs, they came off as if by mistake and he fell on his back. I then sheathed my sword, took his and attacked him with it until it broke." (4)

## Hadhrat Baraa bin Maalik رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ Scales a Wall and Fights the Enemy all by Himself

Ibn Is'haaq narrates that the Muslims drove back the Mushrikeen during the

(1) Haakim (Vol.3 Pg.299).

(2) Waaqidi, as quoted in *Al Bidaaya wan Nihaaya* (Vol.7 Pg.114).

(3) Sarraaj in his *Taareekh*.

(4) Baghawi, as quoted in *Isaaba* (Vol.1 Pg.143).

Battle of Yamaamah until they were forced to take refuge in an orchard. With them was the enemy of Allaah Musaylama. Hadhrat Baraa bin Maalik رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ then said, "O Muslims! Throw me on to them." He was then lifted up and when he was level with the top of the wall, he threw himself upon the enemy and fought them until he was able to open the gate for the Muslims. The Muslims then stormed the orchard and Allaah had Musaylama killed. (1)

Hadhrat Muhammad bin Seereen reports that (during the Battle of Yamaamah), the Muslims reached the orchard where in the Mushrikeen were and found the gate locked. Hadhrat Baraa bin Maalik رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ sat on a shield and said to the others, "Lift me up with your spears and throw me on them." They lifted the shield with their spears and threw him over the wall. When the Muslims joined up with him afterwards (after he had opened the gate for them), they found that he had already killed ten Mushrikeen. (2)

Hadhrat Muhammad bin Seereen narrates that Hadhrat Umar رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ decreed that Hadhrat Baraa bin Maalik رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ should not be appointed as the commander of any expedition because this would spell destruction (because he cared not for his life and would lead the others to places where the risk may be too much for them). (3)

## The Bravery of Hadhrat Abu Mihjin Thaqafi رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ

### His Fierce Fighting During the Battle of Qaadisiyyah that made People think he was an Angel

Hadhrat Ibn Seereen reports that Hadhrat Abu Mihjin Thaqafi رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ was always being lashed for drinking wine. Eventually, when his drinking became too much, he was jailed and kept in fetters. When he saw the Muslims fighting the Battle of Qaadisiyyah, it appeared to him that the Mushrikeen were causing great harm to the Muslims. He therefore sent a message through the slave girl or the wife of (the Muslim commander) Hadhrat Sa'd bin Abi Waqqaas رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ saying, "Abu Mihjin says that if you set him free, give him a horse and weapons, he will be the first to return to you (after the battle) if he is not martyred." He then recited the following couplets (which meant):

*"It is enough to make me grieve that a horse is carrying spears to the fight  
While I am left in fetters in the jailhouse*

When I stand up, my shackles restrain me

All avenues to martyrdom have been closed to me as the caller (to Jihaad) makes me deaf"

When the slave girl passed the message on to Hadhrat Sa'd رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ's wife, she had his shackles removed, gave him a horse that was at home and some

(1) *Isti'aab* (Vol.1 Pg.138).

(2) Bayhaqi, (Vol.9 Pg.44).

(3) Ibn Sa'd, as quoted in *Muntakhab* (Vol.5 Pg.144).

weapons. He then spurred the horse on until he reached the Muslim army. He killed every Mushrik soldier he met, breaking the man's back. When he saw this, Hadhrat Sa'd ﷺ was astonished and asked, "Who is that horseman?" It was not long thereafter that Allaah had the enemy defeated. Hadhrat Abu Mihjin ﷺ then returned, gave the weapons back and secured his legs to the shackles as they had been.

When Hadhrat Sa'd ﷺ returned, his wife or slave girl asked, "How was the battle?" Informing them of the battle, Hadhrat Sa'd ﷺ replied, "We were being defeated until Allaah sent a rider on a black and white horse. Had I not left Abu Mihjin ﷺ here in shackles, I would have thought that certain features of the man were that of Abu Mihjin ﷺ." The lady then said, "By Allaah! That was Abu Mihjin!" She then narrated the story to Hadhrat Sa'd ﷺ. Hadhrat Sa'd ﷺ called for Hadhrat Abu Mihjin ﷺ, removed his shackles and said, "I swear by Allaah that I shall never again have you lashed for drinking wine." Hadhrat Abu Mihjin ﷺ then said, "And I swear by Allaah that I shall never drink it again. I had been repeatedly drinking because of the lashings that you were giving me." He then never drank wine ever again. (1)

Another lengthy narration from Muhammad bin Sa'd states that after joining the Muslim army, every flank that Hadhrat Abu Mihjin ﷺ attacked was defeated by the permission of Allaah. The Muslims gaped, "He must be an angel!" As Hadhrat Sa'd ﷺ watched, he observed, "The horse's leap is that of (my horse) Balqaa and the man's style is that of Abu Mihjin. However, Abu Mihjin is in prison." When the enemy was defeated, Hadhrat Abu Mihjin ﷺ returned secured his feet back in the shackles.

When the daughter of Hasfah informed Hadhrat Sa'd ﷺ about what had happened with Hadhrat Abu Mihjin ﷺ, Hadhrat Sa'd ﷺ said, "I swear by Allaah that I shall never again penalise the person through whom Allaah has granted honour to the Muslims." When Hadhrat Sa'd ﷺ had set him free, Hadhrat Abu Mihjin ﷺ said, "I always continued drinking when I was being punished because I would then be cleansed from the sin. Now that you have decided not to punish me, I swear by Allaah that I shall never drink wine ever again." (2)

In a narration of Hadhrat Sayf, other couplets are reported. The narration also states that Hadhrat Abu Mihjin ﷺ fought extremely well and that he shouted "Allaahu Akbar" each time he attacked. No enemy soldier could stand before him as he massacred them. Although the Muslims were unable to recognise him, they marveled at his performance. (3)

(1) Abdur Razzaaq, as quoted in *Isti'aab* (Vol.4 Pg.184), narrating from reliable sources, as confirmed by *Isaaba* (Vol.4 Pg.174).

(2) Abu Ahmad Haakim and Ibn Abi Shayba with a minor difference. Ibn Abdul Birr has also reported the narration in his *Isti'aab* (Vol.4 Pg.187).

(3) *Isaaba*.

## The Bravery of Hadhrat Ammaar bin Yaasir رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ

### He Lends Courage to the Muslims and Fights Bravely During the Battle of Yamaamah

Hadhrt Abdullaah bin Umar رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ reports that during the Battle of Yamaamah, he saw Hadhrt Ammaar bin Yaasir رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ standing on a boulder and shouting, "O Assembly of Muslims! Are you running away from Jannah? I am Ammaar bin Yaasir! Are you running away from Jannah? I am Ammaar bin Yaasir! Come to me!" Hadhrt Abdullaah bin Umar رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ says that he watched Hadhrt Ammaar bin Yaasir رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ fighting extremely fiercely even though his ear was cut and it hung loose. (1)

### His Desire for Jannah as he Fought

Hadhrt Abu Abdur Rahmaan Sulami رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ says that he participated in the Battle of Siffeen by the side of Hadhrt Ali رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ. They had appointed two men to guard Hadhrt Ali رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ, who kept launching attacks whenever he could catch the opposition unawares. Hadhrt Ali رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ would then not return from the attack until his sword was well coloured with blood. He would then say, "Do excuse me (for returning but) I swear by Allaah that I do not return until my sword has been dented."

Hadhrt Abu Abdur Rahmaan Sulami رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ narrates further that he saw Hadhrt Ammaar bin Yaasir رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ and Hadhrt Haashim bin Utba رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ as Hadhrt Ali رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ was fighting between two rows of the enemy. (Looking at Hadhrt Ali رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ,) Hadhrt Ammaar رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ said, "O Haashim! By Allaah, this man's commands are being violated and his army is being deserted. O Haashim! Jannah lies beneath flashing swords. Today I shall meet those I love, Muhammad ﷺ and his group. O Haashim! You are one-eyed and one-eyed people are no good if they do not swamp the battlefield." (With this incitement from Hadhrt Ammaar رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ) Hadhrt Haashim رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ waved the flag and said (the following couplets which mean):

*"This one-eyed man has spent his life in search of a home for his family until he has become tired*

*He will now fight until he defeats the opposition or is defeated"*

He then went into one of the valleys of Siffeen (to fight). Hadhrt Abu Abdur Rahmaan Sulami رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ says, "I then saw the Sahabah رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُمْ of Rasulullaah ﷺ follow Hadhrt Ammaar رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ as if he were their flag. (2)

In another narration, Hadhrt Abu Abdur Rahmaan Sulami رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ says, "I noticed that (during the Battle of Siffeen) whenever Hadhrt Ammaar رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ went into any of the valleys of Siffeen, all the Sahabah رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُمْ of Rasulullaah ﷺ who were there followed him. I also saw him approach Haashim bin Utba رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ who

(1) Haakim (Vol.3 Pg.385) and Ibn Sa'd (Vol.3 Pg.254).

(2) Haakim (Vol.3 Pg.394).

bore the flag of Hadhrat Ali رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ's army. He said, 'O Haashim! Advance! Jannah lies beneath the shadow of swords and death lies at the points of spears. The doors of Jannah have been flung wide open and the damsels of Jannah have been beautified. Today I shall meet those I love, Muhammad ﷺ and his group. He then launched an attack with Haashim رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ and they were both martyred. At that moment, Hadhrat Ali رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ and his army also launched an attack on the people of Shaam as if they were all one man. It seemed as if the two men - Hadhrat Ammaar رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ and Hadhrat Haashim رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ - were their banner." (1)

## The Bravery of Hadhrat Amr bin Ma'dikarib رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ

### His Exemplary Fighting During the Battle of Yarmook

Hadhrat Maalik bin Abdullaah Khath'ami رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ says, "I have not seen anyone step forward (to challenge an opponent) in the Battle of Yarmook who was better than a certain Muslim. When a powerfully built Kaafir came to meet his challenge, he effectively killed him. When another came forward, he killed him as well. When the Kuffaar were defeated (and fled) he gave chase and then proceeded to his huge tent. There he called for a large utensil (of food) and invited all those around him (to eat). 'Who is this?' I asked. 'He is Amr bin Ma'dikarib,' came the reply." (2)

### He Fights Single-Handedly During the Battle of Qaadisiyyah

Hadhrat Qais bin Abi Haazim رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ reports that he was present during the Battle of Qaadisiyyah with Hadhrat Sa'd رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ commanding the Muslim army. Hadhrat Amr bin Ma'dikarib رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ passed through the rows saying, "O assembly of Muhaajireen! Be fierce lions (and launch such an attack that will prompt the enemy cavalry to throw their spears) because riders soon lose hope after throwing their spears." Just then, one of the Persian commanders shot an arrow at Hadhrat Amr رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ, which struck the edge of his bow. Hadhrat Amr رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ attacked the man so forcefully with his spear that the man's back was broken. He then dismounted and took the man's possessions. (3)

Ibn Asaakir has narrated a longer version of the story. At the end of his narration, it is stated that when an arrow struck the front of Hadhrat Amr رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ's saddle, he attacked the man who fired it and lifted him up like a little girl is lifted up. He then placed him between the rows (of the Muslims and the Kuffaar) and cut off his head while telling the others, "Do it this way."

Waaqidi had narrated from Isa bin Khayyaat that during the Battle of Qaadisiyyah

(1) Ibn Jareer, as quoted in *Al Bidaaya wan Nihaaya* (Vol.7 Pg.270). Tabraani and Abu Ya'la have reported the narration in detail while Imaam Ahmad has reported it briefly and authentically, as confirmed by Haythami (Vol.7 Pg.241).

(2) Ibn Aa'idh in his *Maghaazi*.

(3) Ibn Abi Shaybah, Ibn Aa'idh, Ibn Sakan, Sayf bin Amr, Tabraani and others, all narrating from reliable sources.

Hadhrat Amr bin Ma'dikarib رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ attacked the Mushrikeen all by himself and fought with his sword until the other Muslims could join him. When the Muslims saw that the Mushrikeen had surrounded Hadhrat Amr رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ who was still wielding his sword, they drove the Mushrikeen away from him.

Tabraani narrated from Muhammad bin Sallaam Jumhi رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ that Hadhrat Umar رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ wrote to Hadhrat Sa'd رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ saying, "I shall reinforce you with two thousand men. They are Hadhrat Amr bin Ma'dikarib رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ and Hadhrat Tulayha bin Khuwaylid رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ."

Hadhrat Abu Saalih bin Wajeih رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ says, "The Battle of Nahaawind took place during the year 21 A.H. and the Muslims were defeated when Hadhrat Nu'maan bin Muqarrin رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ was martyred. Hadhrat Amr bin Ma'dikarib رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ then resumed the fight on that day until he had transformed the defeat into victory. However, an injury incapacitated him and he passed away in the village of Rowdha." (1)

## The Bravery of Hadhrat Abdullaah bin Zubayr رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ

### His Fight Against Hajjaaj and Subsequent Martyrdom

Hadhrat Urwa bin Zubayr رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ reports that after Hadhrat Mu'aawiya رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ passed away, it became very difficult for Hadhrat Abdullaah bin Zubayr رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ to be subservient to Hadhrat Mu'aawiya رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ's son Yazeed. When Hadhrat Abdullaah bin Zubayr رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ once insulted Yazeed in public, Yazeed vowed that if Hadhrat Abdullaah bin Zubayr رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ was not brought before him wearing a yoke around his neck, he would send an army to get him. The people said to Hadhrat Abdullaah bin Zubayr رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ, "Should we not make for you a yoke out of silver which you could wear under your clothing so that his vow could be fulfilled? It is best that you make peace with him." Hadhrat Abdullaah bin Zubayr رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ exclaimed, "May Allaah never fulfil his vow!" He then recited the following couplet (which meant):

**"I shall never soften to his demands that oppose the truth *Until rock is softened for the molars to chew*"**

He then declared, **"By Allaah! The strike of a sword in honour is better than the lash of a whip in disgrace."** Thereafter, he started calling for support and proclaimed his opposition to Yazeed bin Mu'aawiya. Yazeed then dispatched an army from Shaam under the command of Muslim bin Uqba Murri with explicit instructions to fight the people of Madinah and to then march to Makkah. When Muslim entered Madinah, the Sahabah رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُمْ who were left there were already gone. Muslim humiliated the people of Madinah and went on a killing spree. He then left Madinah and was on the way (to Makkah) when he died. However, he had already appointed Husayn bin Numayr Kindi as his successor and said to

(1) Dowlaabi, as quoted in *Isaaba* (Vol.3 Pg.18).

him, "O bearer of the donkey's carriage! Beware of the plotting of the Quraysh. First wage war against them and then kill them selectively." Husayn then proceeded to Makkah and when he reached there, he fought Hadhrat Abdullaah bin Zubayr ﷺ for a few days.

Later on the narration states that when the news reached Husayn bin Numayr that Yazeed had passed away, he fled. When Yazeed bin Mu'aawiyah had passed away, Marwaan bin Hakam canvassed for support. Further on, the narration states that after Marwaan died, Abdul Malik called people to pledge their allegiance to him. The people of Shaam responded to him and he delivered a sermon in which he said, "Who will kill Abdullaah bin Zubayr ﷺ?" When Hajjaaaj volunteered, Abdul Malik silenced him. However, after being silenced for a second time, he again volunteered saying, "I shall do it, O Ameerul Mu'mineen because I saw in a dream that I had snatched his cloak away from him and wore it." Abdul Malik then appointed Hajjaaaj as commander and dispatched him with an army. He started the war against Hadhrat Abdullaah bin Zubayr ﷺ as soon as he reached Makkah. Addressing the people of Makkah, Hadhrat Abdullaah bin Zubayr ﷺ said, "Guard the two mountains because you will always remain in good stead and dominant as long as they do not climb the mountains. It was not much later that Hajjaaaj and his men managed to climb Mount Abu Qubays, where they set up a catapult. They then relentlessly rained down rocks on Hadhrat Abdullaah bin Zubayr ﷺ and his men who were stationed in the Masjidul Haraam.

On the morning of the day in which Hadhrat Abdullaah bin Zubayr ﷺ was martyred, he went to his mother Hadhrat Asmaa ﷺ, the daughter of Hadhrat Abu Bakr ﷺ. Although she was then a hundred years old, not a single tooth had fallen out nor had she lost her eyesight. She asked her son, "O Abdullaah! What has happened to your battle?" He informed her of the extent to which the enemy had advanced and then laughed as he said, "There is peace in death." She said, "Dear son! I hope that you do not wish death to me because I do not want to die until I see one of two results. Either you become the ruler and thus give pleasure to my eyes or either you are martyred and I may expect rewards from Allaah (by exercising patience)." As he bade farewell to her, she said, "Dear son! Ensure that you never compromise on any facet of your Deen for fear of being killed."

Hadhrat Abdullaah bin Zubayr ﷺ then proceeded to the Masjidul Haraam where they had placed two thresholds across the Hajar Aswad (Black Stone) to protect it from the catapult. As Hadhrat Abdullaah bin Zubayr ﷺ was sitting near the Hajar Aswad, someone came to him and asked, "Should we not open the door of the Kabah for you so that you go inside (and be saved from them)?" Hadhrat Abdullaah bin Zubayr ﷺ looked at the person and said, "You may protect your brother from everything except his death. Has the Kabah not have any sanctity that this place does not have (if the enemy do not revere the Masjid itself, they will not revere the Kabah either)? I swear by Allaah that they would kill

you even if you were clinging on to the shroud of the Kabah." Someone then suggested, "Should you not discuss making peace with them?" He replied, "Is this the time for making peace? I swear by Allaah that even if they find you inside the Kabah, they would slaughter you all." He then recited the following couplets (which meant):

***"I shall not sell my life for something that is flawed  
nor shall I climb a ladder for fear of death  
I aspire for an arrow that strikes and cannot be shifted  
How can one who desires death have any other aspiration?"***

Hadhrat Abdullaah bin Zubayr ﷺ then addressed the family of (his father) Hadhrat Zubayr ﷺ saying, "Each one of you should look after his sword as he looks after his face. He should ensure that it does not break otherwise he will have to defend himself with his hands as if he were a woman. By Allaah! I have always been in the front line of every battle and I have never felt the pain of any wound unless I applied medicine to it."

As they were talking, some people suddenly entered through the door of Banu Jumh. Amongst them was black man. "Who are they?" asked Hadhrat Abdullaah bin Zubayr ﷺ. When he was informed that they were people from Hims, he attacked them carrying two swords. The first person he met was the black man, whom he attacked with his sword and severed his leg. The man shouted in pain and said, "O son of an adulteress!" Hadhrat Abdullaah bin Zubayr ﷺ responded by saying, "Get lost, O son of Haam<sup>(1)</sup>! Was Asmaa ever an adulteress?!" Hadhrat Abdullaah bin Zubayr ﷺ then removed them all from the Masjid and returned.

Just then another group of people barged through the Banu Salam door. When Hadhrat Abdullaah bin Zubayr ﷺ asked who they were, he was informed that they were people from Jordan. He then attacked them as he recited the following couplets (which meant):

***"I do not trust an attack that comes in floods  
The dust of which does not settle until the night"***

After he had removed them also from the Masjid, another group of people rushed in through the Banu Makhzoom door. This time, Hadhrat Abdullaah bin Zubayr ﷺ attacked them reciting the following couplet (which meant):

***"Had my opponent been a single person, I would have been more than able to settle with him"***

There were many supporters of Hadhrat Abdullaah bin Zubayr ﷺ on the roof of the Masjid who were throwing bricks on the invaders. However, as Hadhrat Abdullaah bin Zubayr ﷺ attacked the enemy, a brick struck the centre of his head, causing a terrible gash. He paused for a while as he said:

***"Our wounds do not bleed on to our heels  
On the contrary, our blood drops on to our feet (rather than having wounds on the back of our bodies as cowards have), our wounds are on the front parts of our***

(1) Historians are of the opinion that Negroid people are the descendants of Haam, who was one of Hadhrat Nooh ﷺ's sons.

bodies instead)"

He then fell to the ground. His two slaves bend over him saying:

**"The slave protects his master as well as himself"**

However, the enemy soon closed in on him and cut off his head. <sup>(1)</sup>

Hadhrat Is'haaq bin Abi Is'haaq says, "I was present when Hadhrat Abdullaah bin Zubayr رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ was martyred in the Masjidul Haraam. The armies continued entering through the doors of the Masjid and each time one entered, he drove them back single-handedly. As he was doing this, one of the rocks of the Masjid fell on his head and floored him. He was then reciting the following couplet (which meant):

*"O (beloved mother) Asmaa! Do not weep for me if I am killed*

*For my ancestry and Deen are still intact*

*So is my sword that my right hand is now too weak to hold"* <sup>(2)</sup>

## Admonition to Those Who Flee the Battlefield in the path of Allaah

### The Sahabah رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُمْ Admonish Hadhrat Salama bin Hishaam رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ

Hadhrat Ummu Salama رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهَا once asked the wife of Hadhrat Salama bin Hishaam bin Mughiera رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهَا, "Why do I not see (your husband) Salama attend the salaah with Rasulullaah ﷺ and the Muslims?" She replied, "By Allaah! He is unable to leave the house because whenever he does so, people shout at him saying, 'Deserter! Did you flee in the path of Allaah?!' This reached the extent that he now sits at home and is unable to leave." He had participated in the Battle of Mu'ta with Hadhrat Khaalid bin Waleed رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ. <sup>(3)</sup>

### A Man Admonishes Hadhrat Abu Hurayra رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ

Hadhrat Abu Hurayra رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ says, "There was a problem between my cousin and myself. However, I had no reply to give him when he provoked me by saying, 'Were you not one of those who fled during the Battle of Mu'ta?'" <sup>(4)</sup>

## Remorse and Concern Because of Fleeing

### Hadhrat Abdullaah bin Umar رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ and his Companions Regret and Grieve after retreating during the Battle of Mu'ta

Hadhrat Abdullaah bin Umar رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ says, "I was part of an expedition that

(1) Tabraani. Haythami (Vol.7 Pg.255) has commented on the chain of narrators. Ibn Abdil Birr has also reported the narration in detail in his *Isti'aab* (Vol.2 Pg.203) while Abu Nu'aym has reported it briefly in his *Hilya* (Vol.1 Pg.331). Haakim has reported a portion of the beginning in his *Mustadrak* (Vol.3 Pg.550).

(2) Abu Nu'aym and Tabraani.

(3) Haakim (Vol.3 Pg.42) narrating from reliable sources as confirmed by Dhahabi. Ibn Is'haaq has also reported the narration, as quoted in *Al Bidaaya wan Nihaaya* (Vol.4 Pg.249).

(4) Haakim (Vol.3 Pg.42).

Rasulullaah ﷺ dispatched. I was amongst some of them who had retreated. (As we were returning to Madinah) We said, 'What shall we do? We had fled the battlefield and are returning with the wrath of Allaah. Perhaps we should return to Madinah and spend the night (before approaching Rasulullaah ﷺ).' However, we then said, 'Let us rather present ourselves before Rasulullaah ﷺ (immediately upon returning). If we can be forgiven, it is fine, otherwise we shall have to leave (Madinah).' We then went to Rasulullaah ﷺ before the Fajr salaah. When he emerged (from his room), he asked, 'Who are you?' We replied, 'We are those who have fled.' 'No,' Rasulullaah ﷺ assured them, 'You are those who have returned (to your base) only to (seek reinforcements and then to again) return to the fight. I am your base and the base for all Muslims.' (1) We then came forward and kissed Rasulullaah ﷺ's hand." (2)

In another narration, Hadhrat Abdullaah bin Umar رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُمَا says, "Rasulullaah ﷺ once dispatched us on an expedition. When we met the enemy and were defeated in the very first attack, some of us returned to Madinah at night and hid away. We then decided to approach Rasulullaah ﷺ and plead our case to him. We then left and when we met him, we said, 'O Rasulullaah ﷺ! We are those who have fled.' Rasulullaah ﷺ responded by saying, 'You are rather those who shall attack a second time and I am your base (to whom you have returned for reinforcements before returning to the battle).'" The narration of Aswad quotes that Rasulullaah ﷺ added, "I am also the base for every Muslim." (3)

A similar narration of Hadhrat Abdullaah bin Umar رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُمَا reads, "We then said, 'O Rasulullaah ﷺ! We are those who have fled.' He said, 'You are only those who shall return to the fight (after returning to base).' We said, 'O Rasulullaah ﷺ! (Because of embarrassment) We had intended not to enter Madinah, but to undertake a sea voyage (to a foreign land).' Rasulullaah ﷺ reassured us saying, 'Do no such thing for I am the base of every Muslim.'" (4)

## **The Anxiety of the Muhaajireen and the Ansaar when they Fled During the Battle for the Bridge and the Statement of Hadhrat Umar رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ**

Hadhrat Aa'isha رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهَا reports that as Hadhrat Abdullaah bin Zaid رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ was passing the door of her room, she heard Hadhrat Umar رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ call out, "Let us hear the news, O Abdullaah bin Zaid!" Hadhrat Umar رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ was inside the Masjid. (When Hadhrat Abdullaah bin Zaid رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ entered the Masjid) Hadhrat Umar رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ repeated, "What news do you have, O Abdullaah bin Zaid?" Hadhrat Abdullaah bin Zaid رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ said, "I am bringing you the news, O Ameerul Mu'mineen." When he came before Hadhrat Umar رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ, Hadhrat Abdullaah bin

(1) Here Rasulullaah ﷺ was referring to verse 16 of Surah Anfaal.

(2) Ahmad.

(3) Ahmad, as quoted in *Al Bidaaya wan Nihaaya* (Vol.4 Pg.248).

(4) Bayhaqi (Vol.9 Pg.77). Abu Dawood, Tirmidhi, Ibn Majah and Ahmad have also reported the narration, as quoted in the *Tafseer* of Ibn Katheer (Vol.2 Pg.294). Ibn Sa'd (Vol.4 Pg.107) has also reported a similar narration.

Zaid **رَوَاهُ النَّبِيُّ** informed him about what had transpired. Hadhrat Aa'isha **رَوَاهُ النَّبِيُّ** says that she had never heard a more detailed and accurate account of any incident given by someone who had been present there. When the defeated Muslim army returned and Hadhrat Umar **رَوَاهُ النَّبِيُّ** noticed the anxiety of the Muhaajireen and the Ansaar because they had fled the battlefield, he said, "Do not worry, O assembly of Muslims! I am your base to which you have withdrawn (to replenish your strength before returning to battle)."

## **The Anxiety of Hadhrat Mu'aadh Qaari **رَوَاهُ النَّبِيُّ** when he Fled During the Battle for the Bridge and the Statement of Hadhrat Umar **رَوَاهُ النَّبِيُّ****

Hadhrt Muhammad bin Abdur Rahmaan bin Husayn and others report that Hadhrt Mu'aadh Qaari **رَوَاهُ النَّبِيُّ** from the Banu Najjaar tribe was amongst those who were present and had fled during the battle for the Bridge of Abu Ubayd. He always wept whenever he recited the following verse of the Qur'aan:

﴿وَمَنْ يُؤَلِّمُ يَوْمَئِذٍ دُبْرَهُ إِلَّا مُتَحَرِّفًا لِّقِتَالٍ أَوْ مُتَحَيِّزًا إِلَىٰ فِئَةٍ فَقَدْ بَاءَ بِغَضَبٍ مِّنَ اللَّهِ وَمَا لَهُ جَهَنَّمُ ۖ وَبِئْسَ الْمَصِيرُ﴾ (سورة الانفال: ١٦)

On such a day (*of battle*), whoever will turn his back to them with a reason other than altering the course of battle (*such as pretending to flee so that the enemy follows them into an ambush*) or (*flees with a reason other than*) retreating to (*join with*) another group (*of Muslim soldiers so that their combined force can fight the enemy*), then indeed he shall return with Allaah's anger and his abode shall be Jahannam (*because deserting the battlefield is a major sin*). What an evil place to return to! {Surah Anfaal, verse 16}

Hadhrt Umar **رَوَاهُ النَّبِيُّ** would then say to him, "Do not weep, O Mu'aadh. I am your base to whom you have retreated (to regroup and have reinforcements before launching another attack)." (1)

## **Hadhrt Sa'd bin Ubayd Qaari **رَوَاهُ النَّبِيُّ** Returns to the Land of the Battle from which he fled to Redeem himself**

Hadhrt Abdur Rahmaan bin Abu Layla **رَوَاهُ النَّبِيُّ** says that Hadhrt Sa'd bin Ubayd **رَوَاهُ النَّبِيُّ** was a companion of Rasulullaah **رَوَاهُ النَّبِيُّ** who was with the army that was defeated on the day that Hadhrt Abu Ubayd **رَوَاهُ النَّبِيُّ** was martyred (at the bridge). He received the title of Qaari, a title that no other companion of Rasulullaah **رَوَاهُ النَّبِيُّ** received. Hadhrt Umar **رَوَاهُ النَّبِيُّ** once said to him, "Do you wish to go to Shaam where the Muslims are in a weak position and the enemy are becoming bold against them. Perhaps you will be able to cleanse the mistake of your fleeing." Hadhrt Sa'd **رَوَاهُ النَّبِيُّ** replied, "No. I shall go only to the land from which

(1) Ibn Jareer (Vol.4 Pg.70).

I fled and fight only that enemy who forced me to do what I did." He then went to Qadisiyyah where he was martyred. (1)

## Preparing and Assisting a Person Going out in the path of Allaah

### Rasulullaah ﷺ Gives his Weapons to Hadhrat Usaama ﷺ or to Hadhrat Ali ﷺ

Hadhrt Jabala bin Haaritha ﷺ narrates that whenever Rasulullaah ﷺ was not participating in a battle, he would give his weapons to Hadhrt Usaama ﷺ or to Hadhrt Ali ﷺ. (2)

### An Ansaari gives everything he has Prepared to another Person when he Fell ill.

Hadhrt Anas ﷺ reports that a youngster from the Banu Aslam tribe said, "O Rasulullaah ﷺ! I wish to proceed in Jihaad but do not have any wealth with which to make the necessary preparations." Rasulullaah ﷺ sent him to a certain Ansaari saying, "He had made the necessary preparations for Jihaad but had fallen ill. Tell him that Rasulullaah ﷺ has sent Salaams to him and ask him to give you whatever he had prepared." The youngster went to the Ansaari and conveyed the message to him. The Ansaari then said to his wife, "Give him everything you have prepared for me without holding anything back. By Allaah! Allaah will never bless anything that you hold back from him." (3)

### Referring a Person Going out in the path of Allaah to Someone who can Assist him

Hadhrt Abu Mas'ood Ansaari ﷺ narrates that a man came to Rasulullaah ﷺ and said, "Please provide transport for me because my animal has died." "I have nothing to give you," submitted Rasulullaah ﷺ. Another Sahabi said, "O Rasulullaah ﷺ! I shall refer him to someone who can provide transport for him." Rasulullaah ﷺ then commented, "The one who points others towards good shall have the reward of the one who actually carries it out." (4)

### Rasulullaah ﷺ Encourages the Sahabah ﷺ to Assist those Proceeding in the path of Allaah

Hadhrt Jaabir bin Abdullaah ﷺ reports that when Rasulullaah ﷺ was once embarking on an expedition, he said, "O assembly of Muhaajireen and Ansaar! There are many of your brothers who have neither wealth nor families (who can assist them). Therefore each of you should attach two or three of them to himself." Hadhrt Jaabir ﷺ says further, "As a result, each one of us who

(1) Ibn Sa'd (Vol.3 Pg.300).

(2) Tabraani and Ahmad, narrating from reliable sources as confirmed by Haythami (Vol.5 Pg.283).

(3) Abu Dawood, Muslim (Vol.2 Pg.137) and Bayhaqi (Vol.9 Pg.28).

(4) Muslims (Vol.2 Pg.137) and Bayhaqi (Vol.9 Pg.28).

had an animal would share a turn to ride the animal just as the others (without animals) shared their turns. I attached two or three men to myself and my turn to ride was just like the turns that they had." (1)

## An Ansaari Sahabi رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ Assists Hadhrat Waathila bin Asqa رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ

Hadhrt Waathila bin Asqa رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ narrates, "After Rasulullaah ﷺ had announced the pending march to Tabook, I just went to my family and had returned when the first group of Sahabah رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُمْ had already left. I then started going around Madinah announcing, 'Who will provide transport for a man in exchange for his share of booty?' An old man from the Ansaar responded by saying, 'We shall take his share of the booty on condition that he rides in turns with us and eats with us.' When I agreed, he bade me, 'Let's proceed with the blessings of Allaah.' I then travelled with the man who was the best of travelling companions. When Allaah granted us the booty, I received a few young camels as my share and led them away to my companion. Emerging from his tent, he sat on one of the saddle bags of his camel and said, 'Take them backwards.' (After I had done so,) He then said, 'Now take them forward.' (After doing this) He commented, 'These are fine camels you have here.' I said, 'This is the booty that I had stipulated shall be yours.' 'Keep your camels, dear nephew,' he said, 'for I had intended to have something else.'"

Imaam Bayhaqi says that what the Ansaari meant to say was: "By doing what I did, I had never intended to take remuneration from you. All that I want is to share in your rewards." (2)

## The Statement of Hadhrt Abdullaah bin Mas'ood

رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ

Hadhrt Abdullaah bin Mas'ood رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ said, "Providing a rope (to someone proceeding) in the path of Allaah is more beloved to me than performing Hajj after Hajj." (3)

## Hiring People to Fight in Jihaad

### The Story of a Man and Hadhrt Auf bin Maalik رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ

Hadhrt Auf bin Maalik رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ says, "When Rasulullaah ﷺ sent me on a military expedition, a man came up to me and said, 'I shall go with you on condition that you grant me a share of booty.' He then added, 'I swear by Allaah that I do not even know whether there shall be any booty at all. You will therefore be unable to stipulate a specific share for me.' I therefore fixed a payment of three Dinaars for him. We then left on the expedition and happened to receive some booty. When I asked Rasulullaah ﷺ about the situation,

(1) Bayhaqi (Vol.9 Pg.172) and Haakim (Vol.2 Pg.90).

(2) Bayhaqi (Vol.9 Pg.28).

(3) Tabraani, narrating from reliable sources as confirmed by Haythami (Vol.5 Pg.284).

Rasulullaah ﷺ said, 'I see nothing in this world and in the Akhirah for him besides the three Dinaars that he has taken.'" (1)

## The Story of a man with Hadhrat Ya'la bin Munya

رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ

Hadhrt Abdullaah bin Daylami narrates that Hadhrt Ya'la bin Munya رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ said, "I was an old man with no servant when Rasulullaah ﷺ announced that an expedition was to leave. I therefore looked for someone to hire and stipulated that he would receive a full share from the booty. I finally found someone. When the time was close for our departure, he came to me and said, 'I have no idea whether there shall be any booty and I cannot say what my share will be. Why don't you rather specify a fixed amount that I would receive whether there is any booty or not.' I therefore fixed an amount of three Dinaars. When (my share of) the booty came to me, I intended to give him his complete share but then remembered the three Dinaars. For this reason, I approached Rasulullaah ﷺ and narrated the account to him. Rasulullaah ﷺ said, 'I see nothing in this world and in the Akhirah for him as reward for this expedition besides the three Dinaars that he has specified (these Dinaars are all that he will receive).'" (2)

## Those Who Proceed in the path of Allaah Using the Wealth of Others

Hadhrt Maymoona bint Sa'd رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهَا Asks

Rasulullaah ﷺ about this

Hadhrt Maymoona bint Sa'd رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهَا reports that she once asked, "O Rasulullaah ﷺ! Inform us about a person who cannot proceed in the path of Allaah but sponsors the means by which Jihaad can be carried out. Will this person receive the reward or the person who actually goes out?" Rasulullaah ﷺ replied, "He shall receive the reward for his wealth while the one who goes out shall be rewarded for the intention he makes (he shall therefore receive no rewards if his intentions are incorrect)." (3)

## Sending another in One's Place

The Story of Hadhrt Ali رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ and Another Man

Hadhrt Ali bin Abi Rabee'ah رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ narrates that a man once came to Hadhrt Ali bin Abi Taalib رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ with his son whom he intended to send on an expedition in his place. Hadhrt Ali رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ said to him, "I prefer the judgement of an adult to the fighting of a youngster." (4)

(1) Tabraani. Haythami (Vol.5 Pg.323) has commented on the chain of narrators.

(2) Bayhaqi (Vol.2 Pg.331).

(3) Tabraani. Haythami (Vol.5 Pg.323) has commented on the chain of narrators.

(4) Bayhaqi and others, as quoted in *Kanzul Ummaal* (Vol.3 Pg.164).

## Admonishing those Who Beg from people so that they may Proceed in the path of Allaah

### Hadhrat Umar رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ Admonishes a Youngster Who Begged from people so that he Could Proceed in the path of Allaah

Hadhrat Naafi narrates that a robust and healthy youngster once entered the Masjid. He held a large arrow in his hand and announced, "Who will assist me to proceed in the path of Allaah?" Hadhrat Umar رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ sent for him and when he was brought, Hadhrat Umar رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ announced, "Who will hire this man from me to work his fields?" One of the Ansaar said, "I shall hire him, O Ameerul Mu'mineen. What do you ask as his monthly salary?" When the Ansaari specified an amount, Hadhrat Umar رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ handed the youngster over to him. The youngster had worked in the fields for several months when Hadhrat Umar رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ asked the Ansaari, "How is our labourer?" "He is a fine man, O Ameerul Mu'mineen," replied the Ansaari. Hadhrat Umar رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ then instructed the Ansaari to bring the youngster along together with his salaries that he had collected. The Ansaari then brought the youngster together with a bag of Dirhams. Hadhrat Umar رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ then said (to the youngster), "Take this. If you wish, you may proceed now in the path of Allaah and if you wish, you may sit at home." (1)

## Taking Loans to Proceed in Jihaad

### The Sahabah رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُمْ Seek Loans from Rasulullaah ﷺ

Hadhrat Abdullaah bin Mas'ood رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ narrates that someone asked, "Have you heard Rasulullaah ﷺ say anything about horses?" "Yes," he replied, "I have heard Rasulullaah ﷺ say, 'Virtue has been secured to the forelocks of horses until the Day of Qiyaamah. Buy with trust in Allaah and take loans with trust in Allaah.' When someone asked Rasulullaah ﷺ how could a person buy with trust in Allaah and take loans with trust in Allaah, Rasulullaah ﷺ replied, 'Tell (the borrower) to give you the loan until (you are able to pay him back when) the spoils of war are distributed and tell (the seller) to sell to you now until (you are able to pay him when) Allaah grants victory in battle (and you are able to pay from the share you receive of the booty). You will always remain in good stead as long as your Jihaad remains fresh (as long as you fight with enthusiasm). Towards the end of time there shall be people who will have doubts about Jihaad. You should however continue waging Jihaad during their time and continue fighting because Jihaad will be fresh during those times as well (Allaah's assistance and booty will be found then as well).'" (2)

(1) Bayhaqi, as quoted in *Kanzul Ummaal* (Vol.2 Pg.217).

(2) Abu Ya'la. Haythami (Vol.5 Pg.280) has commented on the chain of narrators.

## Encouraging People to Proceed in the path of Allaah and Seeing them Off

### Rasulullaah ﷺ Walks with the Mujaahideen and Advises them

Hadhrat Abdullaah bin Abbaas رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ reports that Rasulullaah ﷺ walked with them up to Baqee Gharqad when he sent them off on an expedition. He then said to them, "Proceed in the name of Allaah. O Allaah! Assist them." (1)

When Hadhrat Abdullaah bin Yazeed رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ was once invited for a meal, he mentioned to the people that whenever Rasulullaah ﷺ bade farewell to an army, he prayed, "In Allaah's care do I hand over your Deen, your trusts and the results of your deeds." (2)

### Hadhrat Abu Bakr رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ Sees the Army of Hadhrat Usaama رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ off

In a narration discussing the dispatching of Hadhrat Usaama رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ's army, Hadhrat Hasan رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ narrates that Hadhrat Abu Bakr رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ left his home to meet the army. As he saw them off, Hadhrat Abu Bakr رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ was walking while Hadhrat Usaama رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ rode his animal. In the meanwhile, Hadhrat Abdur Rahmaan bin Auf رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ was leading Hadhrat Abu Bakr رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ's animal along. Hadhrat Usaama رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ said, "O Khalifah of Rasulullaah ﷺ! Either you ride or I shall dismount." Hadhrat Abu Bakr رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ instructed, "By Allaah! Neither should you dismount nor shall I ride! What harm can there be if my feet get dusty for a while in the path of Allaah? A person proceeding in the path of Allaah receives the reward of seven hundred good deeds for every step he takes. In addition to this, his status is elevated by seven hundred degrees and seven hundred of his sins are forgiven." After Hadhrat Abu Bakr رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ had seen them off, and was returning, he requested, "If you deem it appropriate to assist me with (leaving) Hadhrat Umar رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ (behind with me in Madinah), please do so." Hadhrat Usaama رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ then allowed Hadhrat Umar رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ to stay back. (3)

Hadhrat Yahya bin Sa'eed reports that when Hadhrat Abu Bakr رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ dispatched several armies to Shaam, he walked with Hadhrat Yazeed bin Abu Sufyaan رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ who was in command of one of the four armies. Hadhrat Yazeed رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ said to Hadhrat Abu Bakr رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ, "Either you ride or I shall dismount." Hadhrat Abu Bakr رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ instructed, "By Allaah! Neither will you dismount nor shall I ride! I hope to be rewarded for these steps in the path of Allaah." (4)

Hadhrat Jaabir Ru'ayni رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ narrates that as Hadhrat Abu Bakr رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ was walking as he saw an army off. He then said to them, "All praises are for Allaah Who has allowed our feet to accumulate dust in His path." Someone asked, "How

(1) Haakim (Vol.2 Pg.98).

(2) Haakim (Vol.2 Pg.98).

(3) Ibn Asaakir, as quoted in *Kanzul Ummaal* (Vol.5 Pg.314).

(4) Maalik and Bayhaqi, as quoted in *Kanzul Ummaal* (Vol.2 Pg.295).

have our feet become dusty (in the path of Allaah) when we are merely seeing them off?" Hadhrat Abu Bakr رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ replied, "Because we have helped them prepare, have seen them off and are making du'aa for them (we shall therefore also share in the rewards of going out in the path of Allaah)." (1)

## Hadhrat Abdullaah bin Umar رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ Sees off Some People Proceeding in the path of Allaah

Hadhrt Mujaahid reports that as he was proceeding in the path of Allaah, Hadhrt Abdullaah bin Umar رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ came to see them off. As Hadhrt Abdullaah bin Umar رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ was about to part from them, he said, "I have nothing to give you, but I have heard Rasulullaah ﷺ say that whenever something is handed over in Allaah's care, Allaah protects it. I therefore hand over in Allaah's care, your Deen, your trusts and the results of your deeds." (2)

## Welcoming those Returning from the path of Allaah

### The People Came Outside Madinah when the Sahabah رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُمْ Returned from their Expedition to Tabook

Hadhrt Saa'ib bin Yazeed رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ says, "The people (of Madinah) came to welcome Rasulullaah ﷺ when he returned from the expedition to Tabook. I also met him along with other children at Thaniyyatul Wadaa." (3)

Hadhrt Saa'ib bin Yazeed رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ also reports, "When Rasulullaah ﷺ returned from the expedition to Tabook, the people came out of Madinah to Thaniyyatul Wadaa to welcome him. Still a boy then, I also accompanied the others." (4)

## Proceeding in the path of Allaah During the month of Ramadhaan

### Rasulullaah ﷺ Proceeds to Badr and to Makkah during the Month of Ramadhaan

Hadhrt Umar رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ says that it was during Ramadhaan that they marched with Rasulullaah ﷺ for the Battle of Badr and for the conquest of Makkah. (5)

Another narration quotes that Hadhrt Umar رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ said, "We marched on two military expeditions with Rasulullaah ﷺ during Ramadhaan; the Battle of Badr and the conquest of Makkah. On both occasions, we did not fast." (6)

(1) Bayhaqi (Vol.9 Pg.173). Ibn Abi Shayba has also reported the narration as quoted in *Kanzul Ummaal* (Vol.2 Pg.288).

(2) Bayhaqi (Vol.9 Pg.173).

(3) Abu Dawood.

(4) Bayhaqi (Vol.9 Pg.175).

(5) Tirmidhi, as quoted in *Fat'hul Baari* (Vol.4 Pg.131).

(6) Ibn Sa'd and Ahmad, as quoted in *Kanzul Ummaal* (Vol.4 Pg.329).

Hadhrat Abdullaah bin Abbaas رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ says, "Three hundred and thirteen Muslims participated in the Battle of Badr. Amongst these, seventy six were from the Muhaajireen. It was on Friday the 17th of Ramadhaan that the Mushrikeen were defeated in the Battle of Badr." (1) Another narration from

Hadhrat Abdullaah bin Abbaas رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ states that the Sahabah رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُمْ participating in the Battle of Badr numbered just more than three hundred and ten. The narration also adds, "The Ansaar numbered two hundred and thirty six and it was Hadhrat Ali رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ who carried the flag of the Muhaajireen." (2)

Yet another from Hadhrat Abdullaah bin Abbaas رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ states, "When Rasulullaah ﷺ left for the journey, he appointed Hadhrat Abu Ruhm Kulthoom bin Husayn bin Utba bin Khalaf Ghifaari رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ as his deputy in Madinah. It was on the tenth of Ramadhaan that he left. Rasulullaah ﷺ fasted and so did the Sahabah رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُمْ with him. However, when they reached Kudayd, an oasis located between Usfaan and Amaj, Rasulullaah ﷺ terminated his fast. Rasulullaah ﷺ then proceeded until he set up camp at Marruz Zahraan along with the ten thousand Sahabah رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُمْ with him." (3)

Hadhrat Abdullaah bin Abbaas رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ has also narrated that Rasulullaah ﷺ proceeded in Ramadhaan to conquer Makkah and fasted until he reached Kudayd. (4)

Another narration states that when Rasulullaah ﷺ left to conquer Makkah during Ramadhaan, he was fasting until the road passed by Qudayd at midday. The Sahabah رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُمْ were thirsty and started craning their necks (in search of water). They had started becoming uneasy when Rasulullaah ﷺ asked for a cup of water. He then took it in his hand so that everyone could clearly see it. Thereafter, he drank the water and the Sahabah رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُمْ followed suit. (5)

## Recording the Names of People Proceeding in the path of Allaah

### An Incident of a Sahabi رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ

Hadhrat Abdullaah bin Abbaas رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ narrates that Rasulullaah ﷺ once said, "No strange (non-Mahram) man should ever be alone with a strange (non-Mahram) woman and no woman can travel without a Mahram." A Sahabi رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ stood up and said that his name had been written for a particular military expedition while his wife had left to perform Hajj (he queried whether he should continue with the expedition or join his wife for Hajj). Rasulullaah ﷺ instructed him to perform Hajj with his wife instead. (6)

(1) Ahmad, as quoted in *Al Bidaaya wan Nihaaya* (Vol.3 Pg.269).

(2) Bazzaar. Tabraani have also reported the narration and Haythami (Vol.6 Pg.93) has commented on the chain of narrators.

(3) Ibn Is'haaq and Bukhari, as quoted in *Al Bidaaya wan Nihaaya* (Vol.4 Pg.285). Tabraani has also reported the narration from reliable sources, as confirmed by Haythami (Vol.6 Pg.167).

(4) Abdur Razzaaq and Ibn Abi Shaybah.

(5) Abdur Razzaaq, as quoted in *Kanzul Ummaal* (Vol.4 Pg.330). Bukhari, Muslim and Nasa'ee have also reported the narration, as quoted in *Jam'ul Fawaa'id* (Vol.1 Pg.159).

(6) Bukhari.

## Performing Salaah and Eating Upon Returning from the path of Allaah

### Rasulullaah ﷺ Performs Salaah upon his Return

Hadhrat Ka'b رضي الله عنه narrates that whenever Rasulullaah ﷺ returned from a journey during the morning, he would first enter the Masjid and perform two Rakaahs salaah before being seated. <sup>(1)</sup>

Another narration from Hadhrat Jaabir رضي الله عنه states that he accompanied Rasulullaah ﷺ on a journey and when they returned, Rasulullaah ﷺ said to him, "Enter the Masjid and perform two Rakaahs salaah." <sup>(2)</sup>

### Slaughtering an Animal upon Returning to Feed People

Hadhrat Jaabir رضي الله عنه has also narrated that when Rasulullaah ﷺ once returned to Madinah, he slaughtered a cow or a camel. Another narration quotes that Hadhrat Jaabir رضي الله عنه said, "Rasulullaah ﷺ purchased a camel from me for two Awqiya and a Dirham or for two Dirhams. When he reached Siraar, Rasulullaah ﷺ had a cow slaughtered and the Sahabah رضي الله عنهم ate from it. Thereafter when he reached Madinah, Rasulullaah ﷺ instructed me to first go the Masjid to perform two Rakaahs salaah. Rasulullaah ﷺ then weighed out the price for my camel and paid me." <sup>(3)</sup>

### Women Proceed in the path of Allaah

Hadhrat Aa'isha رضي الله عنها Participated in the Banu Mustaliq expedition

Hadhrat Aa'isha رضي الله عنها says, "Whenever Rasulullaah ﷺ embarked on an expedition, he would draw lots between his wives and whoever's name was drawn would accompany him. When the Banu Mustaliq expedition was to take place, Rasulullaah ﷺ again drew lots as he usually did. This time my name emerged as the one to accompany him. Rasulullaah ﷺ therefore took me along. **During those times women ate just enough to sustain themselves.** The flab on their bodies was therefore less and they were lighter in weight. For this reason I would sit in my carriage when it was loaded on my camel. The men who fastened the carriage to the camel for me would lift the carriage from the bottom, lift me up and place the carriage on to the camel. They would then secure it with ropes, take the camel by the head and lead it along.

After the journey was done, Rasulullaah ﷺ left (for Madinah) and we were close to Madinah when we set up came and spent part of the night there. When the announcer announced that it was time to depart, everyone got ready to move. Wearing a necklace of mine that was decorated with onyx from the Yemeni tribe of Dhifaar, I went (out of the camp) to relieve myself. When I had completed, the necklace had slipped from my neck without me knowing it. It was only after returning to my carriage that I felt my neck and could not find it. The people had

(1) Bukhari.

(2) Bukhari.

(3) Bukhari.

already started leaving when I returned to the place I had been. There I looked for it until I eventually found it. The men who usually tied my carriage had by then already tied it to the camel. **Thinking that I was inside, they did what they always did and took the carriage away.** Without even once suspecting (that I was not inside), they picked up the carriage and loaded it on to the camel. They then took the camel by the head and led it away. When I eventually returned to the camp, there was not a soul in sight. Everyone had left. I then spread out my shawl at the place where I had been and lay down. I knew that once my absence was detected, people would return to where I was (to search for me).

By Allaah! I was still lying there when Safwaan bin Mu'attal Sulami ﷺ passed by. He had fallen behind the expedition for some reason and had not spent the night in the camp. Seeing my silhouette, he came closer until he stopped by me. **He had seen me before we were instructed to don the Hijaab** and when he saw that it was I lying there, he exclaimed in astonishment, 'Innaa Lillaahi wa Innaa Ilayhi Raaji'oon! The wife of Rasulullaah ﷺ! I was properly wrapped up in my clothing when he said, 'May Allaah have mercy on you. How did you get left behind?' I did not speak a word to him. He brought his camel next to me and said, 'Mount the camel and stay behind me.' I mounted the camel and he led it quickly along by its head, in search of the rest. By Allaah! Neither did we catch up with the others until the morning, nor did they notice my absence. The army had set up camp and were resting when Safwaan ﷺ was seen leading me on the camel. It was then that the slanderers said what they did (about me being an adulteress), causing much tumult amongst the army. I swear by Allaah that I was then still in the dark concerning what was happening.

After we had returned to Madinah, no news had still reached me (about the slander) when I happened to fall terribly ill. In the meanwhile, the news had reached Rasulullaah ﷺ and my parents, none of whom breathed a word to me. All that I noticed was a lack in the affection that Rasulullaah ﷺ usually showed towards me. Whereas he expressed tremendous love and affection towards me whenever I fell ill, he did not do so this time. This greatly disappointed me. When he came to me as my mother was nursing me, he asked, 'How are you feeling?' That was all he said. I eventually grew upset with his apparent indifference and asked, 'O Rasulullaah ﷺ! Permit me to move to my mother's place for she has been nursing me all along. When Rasulullaah ﷺ indicated that it was not a problem, I moved to my mother's. I was then still completely in the dark about what had been happening until I had started to recover from **my illness after twenty odd days.**

We Arabs were not accustomed to building toilets inside our houses like the non-Arabs do. We disliked this and regarded it as something deplorable. We used to go outside Madinah (to relieve ourselves) and every night us women would go there (together). I had gone out to relieve myself one day in the company of Ummu Mistah who was the daughter of Abu Ruhm bin Abdul Muttalib. By Allaah! We were still walking when she tripped over her shawl and exclaimed, 'May

Mistah be destroyed!' 'By Allaah!' I reproved, 'What a terrible thing to say about a man from amongst the Muhaajireen who has participated in the Battle of Badr!' She then asked, 'Has the news not yet reached you, O daughter of Abu Bakr?' 'What news?' I enquired. She then informed me about what the slanderers were saying. 'Has all this really been happening?' I asked in disbelief. 'Yes,' she replied, 'I swear by Allaah that it certainly has.' By Allaah! (After hearing all of this) I was unable to even relieve myself properly and returned. I then wept continuously until I actually thought that my liver would burst.

I said to my mother, 'May Allaah forgive you! The people have been saying what they have said and you didn't even mention a word to me!' my mother responded by saying, 'Take it easy, dear daughter! When a beautiful woman has a husband who loves her greatly and has co-wives as well, it does happen that the wives and other people pick on her.'

Unknown to me, Rasulullaah ﷺ had already delivered a sermon to the people. After praising Allaah, he said, 'O people! What is the matter with some of you who cause me hurt with regards to my family by saying things that are not true? I swear by Allaah that I see only good in my wives. They are also making allegations about a man (Hadhrat Safwaan bin Mu'attal ﷺ) about whom I also swear that I know only as a good man. He never enters any of my rooms without me with him.' Most of the slander was publicised by (the Munaafiq) Abdullaah bin Ubay bin Salool along with some men from the Khazraj tribe. Also involved were Mistah ﷺ and Hamna bint Jahash ﷺ. Hamna bint Jahash was involved because her sister Zaynab bint Jahash ﷺ was a wife of Rasulullaah ﷺ and from all the other wives of Rasulullaah ﷺ, she was the only one who was of any competition to me. Since Allaah protected Zaynab ﷺ because of her piety, she had only good words to say (and did not slander me). On the other hand, Hamna ﷺ passed around plenty of slander to spite me for the sake of her sister. In this manner, she defamed only herself.

After Rasulullaah ﷺ had delivered the sermon, Hadhrat Usayd bin Hudhayr ﷺ (of the Aws tribe) said, 'O Rasulullaah ﷺ! Had the slanderers been from the Aws tribe, we would have dealt with them on your behalf. However, if they are from our brothers of the Khazraj tribe, we shall do as you command. By Allaah! They ought to be executed!' It was then that Hadhrat Sa'd bin Ubaadah ﷺ stood up. Although he was always regarded as a good man, he retorted by saying (to Hadhrat Usayd ﷺ), 'By Allaah! You are lying! They shall not be executed! I swear by Allaah that you say this only because you know that they are from the Khazraj. You would never have said it had you known that they were from your tribe!' Hadhrat Usayd bin Hudhayr ﷺ replied, 'By Allaah! It is you who are lying! You must be a Munaafiq since you are defending the Munaafiqeen!' The Sahabah ﷺ (belonging to the Aws and the Khazraj tribes) stood up to confront each other until a fight almost erupted between the two tribes.

Rasulullaah ﷺ descended from the pulpit and came to me. After some time

revelation had stopped coming to him, he called for Ali bin Abi Taalib ﷺ and Usaama bin Zaid ﷺ to consult with them about separating from his wife (myself). Usaama ﷺ had only good to say and added, 'O Rasulullaah ﷺ! We only know your family to be good. The news is a blatant lie.' On the other hand, Ali ﷺ only said, 'O Rasulullaah ﷺ! Women are plenty and you are able to get others in their place. Ask the slave girl (Bareerah ﷺ) for she will give you the truth.' When Rasulullaah ﷺ summoned Bareerah ﷺ, Ali ﷺ rapped her quite harshly and said, 'Be truthful to Rasulullaah ﷺ!' Bareerah ﷺ said, 'By Allaah! I know of nothing but good in Aa'isha. I can find no fault in her besides the fact that after I have kneaded the dough and instructed her to look after it, she falls asleep and along comes the goat to eat it up.'

Continuing the story, Hadhrat Aa'isha ﷺ says further, "Rasulullaah ﷺ then came to me when I was staying with my parents. A woman from the Ansaar was with me at the time and she wept with me as I wept. Rasulullaah ﷺ sat down and after praising Allaah, he said, 'O Aa'isha! The talk of people has already reached your ears. Do fear Allaah. If you have come close to what the people are saying, repent to Allaah for He accepts the repentance of His servants.' By Allaah! As soon as Rasulullaah ﷺ said this, my tears immediately stopped and I could not even feel them. I waited for my parents to reply to Rasulullaah ﷺ, but they said nothing. By Allaah! I never regarded myself so distinguished that verses of the Qur'aan should be revealed about me (to clear my name), which would be recited (forever) and read in salaah. However, all I wished for was that Rasulullaah ﷺ should see a dream in which Allaah would deny the allegations on my behalf, for Allaah knew that I was innocent. (All that I expected was that) Allaah would inform (Rasulullaah ﷺ) accordingly. In no way did I regard myself worthy of having verses of the Qur'aan revealed about me.

Nevertheless, when I noticed that my parents were not going to say anything (in my defence), I said to them, 'Are you two not going to reply to Rasulullaah ﷺ?' 'By Allaah!' they replied, 'We do not know what to say.' By Allaah! I do not know of any family that had so much difficulty come upon them as had come to the family of Abu Bakr ﷺ during that period. When my parents said nothing, tears welled in my eyes and I burst out crying. I then snapped, 'By Allaah! I shall never repent to Allaah for what they say I did! By Allaah! Should I admit to what they say when Allaah knows well that I am innocent of it, I shall only be admitting to something I have never done. On the other hand, if I deny it, they will never believe me.' I then searched for the name of Ya'qoob ﷺ but could not remember it. Nonetheless, I said that I would say exactly what the father of Yusuf ﷺ said:

﴿فَصَبِّرْ جَمِيلٌ ۖ وَاللَّهُ الْمُسْتَعَانُ عَلَىٰ مَا تَصِفُونَ﴾ (سورة اليوسف: ١٨)

'However, I shall exercise patience without any complaint, and I shall seek Allaah's assistance against what you have devised.' {Surah Yusuf, verse 18}

Rasulullaah ﷺ was still sitting where he was when (revelation started descending on him and) he started swooning as he did when revelation descended. A shawl was placed over Rasulullaah ﷺ and a leather pillow was placed beneath his head. By Allaah! When I saw this happen, I neither felt any fear nor was I worried in the least because I knew that I was innocent and that Allaah would never be unjust towards me. Not so for my parents. I swear by the Being Who controls the life of Aa'isha that as long as the condition did not leave Rasulullaah ﷺ, I thought that the two of them would die out of fear that Allaah would prove the slander of the people to be true. Rasulullaah ﷺ sat up after the condition had passed and although it was a cold day, beads of perspiration decorated his face like pearls. As he wiped the perspiration from his face, he said, 'Good news, O Aa'isha! Allaah has confirmed your innocence.' 'All praise be to Allaah!' I exclaimed.

Rasulullaah ﷺ then went out to the people and delivered a sermon. He recited to them the verses of the Qur'aan that Allaah had revealed in this regard and instructed that Mistah bin Uthaatha رَضِيَ اللَّهُ عَنْهُ, Hassaan bin Thaabit رَضِيَ اللَّهُ عَنْهُ and Hamna bint Jahash رَضِيَ اللَّهُ عَنْهَا be lashed according to the prescribed penalty because of the part they played in spreading the accusation of immoral behaviour. (1)

Another detailed narration quoted that Hadhrat Aa'isha رَضِيَ اللَّهُ عَنْهَا added, "(After the verses of my innocence were revealed) My mother said to me, 'Stand up and go to Rasulullaah ﷺ (to thank him).' I said, 'I swear by Allaah that I shall not go to him and shall thank none but Allaah for it was Allaah Who confirmed my innocence.' Allaah revealed ten verses beginning with:

﴿إِنَّ الَّذِينَ جَاءُوا بِالْإِفْكِ عُصْبَةٌ مِّنْكُمْ .....﴾ (سورة النور: ١١)

It was indeed a (hypocritical) group from you that brought (initiated) the slander... {Surah Noor, verse 11}

(My father) Abu Bakr رَضِيَ اللَّهُ عَنْهُ used to support Mistah رَضِيَ اللَّهُ عَنْهُ because he was related to us and because he was very poor. However, after the verses attesting to my innocence were revealed, Abu Bakr رَضِيَ اللَّهُ عَنْهُ said, 'I swear by Allaah that I shall never support him because of what he said about Aa'isha!' It was then that Allaah revealed the verse:

﴿وَلَا يَأْتِ أَوْلِيَا الْفُضْلِ مِّنْكُمْ وَالسَّعَةِ أَنْ يُؤْتُوا أَوْلِيَ الْقُرْبَىٰ وَالْمَسْكِينِ وَالْمُهَاجِرِينَ فِي سَبِيلِ اللَّهِ صَ وَلْيَعْفُوا وَلْيَصْفَحُوا ۗ أَلَا تُحِبُّونَ أَنْ يَغْفِرَ اللَّهُ لَكُمْ ۗ وَاللَّهُ غَفُورٌ رَّحِيمٌ﴾ (سورة النور: ٢٢)

The high ranking and wealthy ones among you (like Abu Bakr رَضِيَ اللَّهُ عَنْهُ) should not take an oath not to spend on their relatives, the poor and on those who migrate in Allaah's path. (Instead of bearing a grudge against these people,) They should (rather) forgive and pardon. Do you

(1) Ibn Is'haaq, Bukhari and Muslim have also reported the narration from Zuhri, as quoted in *Al Bidaaya wan Nihaaya* (Vol.4 Pg.160).

not like Allaah to forgive you? *(Just as you would like Allaah to forgive you for your shortcomings, you should also forgive the shortcomings of others. Be like) Allaah (Who) is Most Forgiving, Most Merciful.* {Surah Noor, verse 22}

(Upon revelation of this verse,) Abu Bakr **رضي الله عنه** said, 'By Allaah! Of course I would like Allaah to forgive me.' He then continued giving Mistah **رضي الله عنه** the allowance he had been giving him and said, 'I swear by Allaah that I shall never stop giving it to him ever.'" (1)

## **A Woman from the Banu Ghifaar Tribe Accompanies Rasulullaah **ﷺ** on a Military expedition**

A lady from the Banu Ghifaar tribe narrates, "Together with a few women from the Banu Ghifaar, I approached Rasulullaah **ﷺ** and requested, 'O Rasulullaah **ﷺ**! We want to accompany you on the expedition ahead (to Khaybar) so that we may nurse the wounded and assist the Muslims in any way we can.' Rasulullaah **ﷺ** replied, '(You are welcome) With the blessings of Allaah.' We then went with Rasulullaah **ﷺ**. Since I was a very young girl, Rasulullaah **ﷺ** put me to sit behind him on the satchel of his camel. When Rasulullaah **ﷺ** dismounted from the camel the next morning, I also dismounted from the satchel and was surprised to find blood on it. It was the first time that I had menstruated so I was terribly embarrassed and clung on to the camel. Gauging what had happened to me, Rasulullaah **ﷺ** said, 'What's the matter? Have you perhaps menstruated?' When I replied in the affirmative, Rasulullaah **ﷺ** said, 'Get yourself organised and then get a utensil of water. Add some salt to the water and then wash off the part of the satchel that had blood on it. You may then return to your seat.'"

She continues the story by saying, "After Allaah had given us victory at Khaybar, Rasulullaah **ﷺ** gave us (women) a small share of the spoils. Rasulullaah **ﷺ** took this necklace you see on my neck and gave it to me. Rasulullaah **ﷺ** personally hung it on my neck and I have sworn by Allaah that it would never leave my neck." **The necklace remained on her neck until she passed away, when she requested that it be buried with her.** Whenever she took a bath after menstruating, she always added salt to the water and even made a request that salt be added to the water used to bathe her dead body. (2)

## **The Story of a Woman who Left in the path of Allaah and Her Goat**

Hadhrat Humayd bin Hilaal narrates that a man from the Banu Tufaawa tribe often passed by them and would narrate Ahadeeth to their tribe. He once

(1) Ahmad, as quoted in the *Tafseer* of Ibn Katheer (Vol.3 Pg.270). Tabraani has also reported the narration in detail, as quoted in *Majma'uz Zawaa'id* (Vol.9 Pg.232).

(2) Ibn Is'haaq, as quoted by Ahmad and Abu Dawood. Waaqidi has reported the narration from Hadhrat Umayyah bint Abu Silt **رضي الله عنها**, as quoted in *Al Bidaaya wan Nihaaya* (Vol.4 Pg.204).

narrated, "I arrived in Madinah with one of our caravans. After selling our wares, I told myself that I should meet with Rasulullaah ﷺ and inform the others at home about him. When I came to him, Rasulullaah ﷺ pointed out a house to me and said, 'A woman who lived in that house went out on an expedition with the army and left behind twelve goats and her needle with which she used to knit. However, she lost one of her goats and her needle. She then prayed, 'O my Rabb! You have undertaken to protect those who go out in Your path in every way. I have however lost one of my goats and my needle. I ask You in Your name for my goat and my needle.' Rasulullaah ﷺ then described to me the determined manner in which she prayed to Allaah. By the next morning she had her goat and another just like it as well as her needle with another needle just like it. There she comes. There she is. You may ask her if you like.' 'No,' I replied, 'I believe what you say.'" (1)

## Hadhrat Ummu Haraam bint Milhaan رَوَاتُهَا عَلَيْهِمُ السَّلَامُ the Aunt of Hadhrat Anas رَوَاتُهَا عَلَيْهِمُ السَّلَامُ goes Out in the path of Allaah

Hadhrat Anas رَوَاتُهَا عَلَيْهِمُ السَّلَامُ narrates that Rasulullaah ﷺ once visited Hadhrat Ummu Haraam bint Milhaan رَوَاتُهَا عَلَيْهِمُ السَّلَامُ, where he lay down to sleep. He then woke up smiling. When she asked him why he smiled, Rasulullaah ﷺ replied, "I saw (in a dream) some people from my Ummah who were navigating the green seas in the path of Allaah looking as if they were kings on their thrones." Hadhrat Ummu Haraam رَوَاتُهَا عَلَيْهِمُ السَّلَامُ said, "O Rasulullaah ﷺ! Pray to Allaah that I should be amongst them." Rasulullaah ﷺ prayed, "O Allaah! Make her from amongst them." Rasulullaah ﷺ then again fell asleep and again woke up smiling. When she again asked him the reason for the smiling, he gave her the same reply. When she again asked him to pray that she should be amongst them, he said, "You are with the first group and not with the second."

Hadhrat Anas رَوَاتُهَا عَلَيْهِمُ السَّلَامُ says that Hadhrat Ummu Haraam رَوَاتُهَا عَلَيْهِمُ السَّلَامُ married Hadhrat Ubaadah bin Saamit رَوَاتُهَا عَلَيْهِمُ السَّلَامُ and joined the naval expedition with Bint Qaradha (the wife of Hadhrat Mu'aawiya رَوَاتُهَا عَلَيْهِمُ السَّلَامُ). However, upon return she was riding an animal when it bolted. This caused her to fall and she passed away. (2)

## The services of Women in Jihaad

### Women March with Rasulullaah ﷺ to Tend to the ill and Wounded

Hadhrat Ummu Sulaym رَوَاتُهَا عَلَيْهِمُ السَّلَامُ narrates that several women from the Ansaar proceeded on military expeditions with Rasulullaah ﷺ, where they would provide water for the ill and treat the wounded. (3)

(1) Ahmad, narrating from reliable sources as confirmed by Haythami (Vol.5 Pg.277).

(2) Bukhari.

(3) Tabraani, narrating from reliable sources as confirmed by Haythami (Vol.5 Pg.324).

Hadhrat Anas رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ narrates that Hadhrat Ummu Sulaym رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهَا and other women of the Ansaar would march with Rasulullaah ﷺ on military expeditions. Their function was to provide water and tend to the wounded. (1)

## The Services of Hadhrat Rubayyi Bint Mu'awwidh رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهَا, Hadhrat Ummu Atiyya رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهَا and Hadhrat Layla Ghifaariyya رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهَا in Jihaad

Hadhrat Rubayyi Bint Mu'awwidh رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهَا reports that when they (women) were with Rasulullaah ﷺ on military expeditions, they would provide water (for the soldiers), treat the wounded and retrieve the bodies of the dead. (2) Another narration of Bukhari quotes that she said, "We (women) would proceed on military expeditions with Rasulullaah ﷺ where we would fetch water for the people, serve them and return the dead and wounded to Madinah (when the battlefield was close to Madinah)." (3)

~~~~~

Hadhrat Ummu Atiyya رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهَا who was from the Ansaar says, "I accompanied (the army of) Rasulullaah ﷺ on seven military expeditions. I would stay behind in their camp preparing food for them, nursing their wounded and tending to those with various diseases." (4)

~~~~~

Hadhrat Layla Ghifaariyya رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهَا narrates, "I used to proceed on military expeditions with Rasulullaah ﷺ to nurse the wounded." (5)

## The Services of Hadhrat Aa'isha رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهَا, Hadhrat Ummu Sulaym رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهَا and Hadhrat Ummu Salet رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهَا During the Battle of Uhud

Hadhrat Anas رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ says, "When the Muslims suffered some defeat during the Battle of Uhud and were unable to stay with Rasulullaah ﷺ, I saw Aa'isha رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهَا the daughter of Abu Bakr رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ and Ummu Sulaym رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهَا with their shawls folded high (to allow free movement). I could see their ankle bracelets as they ran with water bags." Another narration states that the two of them were carrying water bags on their backs, emptying the water into the mouths of the wounded and then returning to refill them. They then again returned to empty the water into the mouths of the injured. (6)

~~~~~

Hadhrat Tha'laba bin Abu Maleek رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ narrates that Hadhrat Umar رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ was once distributing some cloth amongst the women of Madinah. When a single good cloth was still left over, some people with him said, "O Ameerul

---

(1) Muslim and Tirmidhi.

(2) Bukhari.

(3) Ahmad has also reported the narration, as quoted in *Muntaqa*.

(4) Ahmad, Muslim and Ibn Maajah, as quoted in *Muntaqa*.

(5) Tabraani. Haythami (Vol.5 Pg.324) has commented on the chain of narrators.

(6) Bukhari, Muslims and Bayhaqi (Vol.9 Pg.30).

Mu'mineen! Give it to the granddaughter of Rasulullaah ﷺ married to you." They were referring to Hadhrat Ummu Kulthoom رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهَا, the daughter of Hadhrat Ali رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ (and Hadhrat Faatima رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهَا). Hadhrat Umar رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ said, "Ummu Saleet is more deserving." Hadhrat Ummu Saleet رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهَا was a woman from the Ansaar who had pledged allegiance to Rasulullaah ﷺ. Hadhrat Umar رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ went on to explain, "Because she sewed water bags for us during the Battle of Uhud." (1)

## Women Proceed for the Battle of Khaybar to Render Services

The grandmother of Hadhrat Hashraj bin Ziyaad رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ narrates that women also accompanied Rasulullaah ﷺ for the Battle of Khaybar. In her narration she mentions that when Rasulullaah ﷺ asked them the reason for going, they replied, "We are going out to weave ropes from animal hair to assist in the path of Allaah. We shall also nurse the wounded, retrieve arrows and give the soldiers barley porridge to drink." (2)

~~~~~

Hadhrt Zuhri narrates that women also participated in the battles with Rasulullaah ﷺ by providing water for the Mujaahideen and nursing the wounded. (3)

## Women Fighting in Jihaad in the path of Allaah

### Hadhrt Ummu Ammaara رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهَا Fights in the Battle of Uhud

Hadhrt Sa'eed bin Abu Zaid Ansaari رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ narrates from Hadhrt Ummu Sa'd bint Sa'd bin Rabee رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهَا that she used to go to her maternal aunt Hadhrt Ummu Ammaara رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهَا and ask her to relate her story. Hadhrt Ummu Ammaara رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهَا would say, "It was at the beginning of the day that I ventured out with a bag of water to see what was happening to the Muslims. When I reached Rasulullaah ﷺ, he was with his companions and the Muslims were enjoying victory and steadfastness. When the Muslims later started losing the battle, I drew close to Rasulullaah ﷺ and openly started fighting. As I fended off the Mushrikeen from Rasulullaah ﷺ, I also fired some arrows with a bow until I sustained many injuries."

The narrator Hadhrt Ummu Sa'd رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهَا says that she noticed a very deep wound on the shoulder of Hadhrt Ummu Ammaara رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهَا and asked her who had afflicted it. She replied, "It was Ibn Qami'Ahmad. May Allaah disgrace him! When the Sahabah رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُمْ had withdrawn from Rasulullaah ﷺ, he came shouting, 'Show me where is Muhammad! I cannot be safe if he is safe!' Myself,

(1) Bukhari. Abu Nu'aym and Abu Ubayd have also reported the narration, as quoted in *Kanzul Ummaal* (Vol.7 Pg.97).

(2) Abu Dawood.

(3) Abdur Razzaq, as quoted in *Fat'hul Baari* (Vol.6 Pg.51).

Mus'ab bin Umayr رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ and a few others who had remained with Rasulullaah ﷺ also confronted him. It was then that he afflicted this wound to me. Although I struck several blows at him with my sword, the enemy of Allaah was wearing two coats of armour." (1)

Hadhrat Umaarah bint Ghaziyyah narrates that during the Battle of Uhud, Hadhrat Ummu Ammaara رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهَا killed a Mushrik horseman. Another narration quotes that Hadhrat Umar رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ said, "I heard Rasulullaah ﷺ say, 'Whether it was to the right or to the left, in whichever direction I turned I saw her (Hadhrat Ummu Ammaara رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهَا) fighting in my defence.'" (2)

In yet another narration, Hadhrat Hamza bin Sa'eed رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ narrates that some woollen shawls were once brought to Hadhrat Umar رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ. Amongst them was a very large one of excellent quality. Some people indicated that it was of great value and should be sent to Safiyya bint Ubayd who was recently married to Hadhrat Umar رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ's son Abdullaah رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ. However, Hadhrat Umar رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ said, "I shall send it to someone who is more deserving to it, namely Ummu Ammaara Nusayba bint Ka'b رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهَا about whom I heard Rasulullaah ﷺ say, 'Whether it was to the right or to the left, in whichever direction I turned I saw her fighting in my defence.'" (3)

## Hadhrat Safiyya رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهَا Fights During the Battle of Uhud and the Battle of Khandaq

Hadhrat Hishaam narrates from his father that when the Muslims were being defeated during the Battle of Uhud, Hadhrat Safiyya رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهَا arrived with a spear in her hand to smite the (retreating) Muslims in the face (and send them back to the battlefield). Rasulullaah ﷺ then said (to her son Hadhrat Zubayr رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ), "O Zubayr! Look after the lady (your mother)." (4)

~~~~~

Hadhrat Abbaad narrates that (during the Battle of Khandaq), Hadhrat Safiyya bint Abdul Muttalib رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهَا was in a fortress called Faari, which belonged to Hadhrat Hassaan bin Thaabit رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ. She narrates, "Hassaan رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ was with us women and children in the fortress when a Jew passed by and started circling the fortress. The Jewish Banu Qurayzah tribe had also declared war on Rasulullaah ﷺ and had severed the ties they had with him. There was none to defend us from the Jews since Rasulullaah ﷺ and the Muslims were at the necks of the enemy and were unable to turn their attention towards us. When this intruder suddenly came upon us, I said, 'O Hassaan! As you can see, this Jew is circling the fortress. By Allaah! I fear that he will inform the Jews behind us about our secrets while Rasulullaah ﷺ and his companions are occupied elsewhere. Go down and kill him.' Hassaan رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ replied, 'May Allaah forgive you, O Daughter of

(1) Ibn Hishaam, as quoted in *Al Bidaaya wan Nihaaya* (Vol.4 Pg.34). Waaqidi has also reported the narration, as quoted in *Isaaba* (Vol.4 Pg.479).

(2) Waaqidi, as quoted in *Isaaba* (Vol.4 Pg.479).

(3) Ibn Sa'd narrating from Waaqidi, as quoted in *Kanzul Ummaal* (Vol.7 Pg.98).

(4) Ibn Sa'd, as quoted in *Isaaba* (Vol.4 Pg.439).

Abdul Muttalib. By Allaah! You know well that I am unable to do that.' When he said this to me and I saw that I could expect no support from him, I took a tent peg and came down from the fortress. I then struck the Jew until he was dead. After finishing off with him, I returned to the fortress and said, 'O Hassaan! Go down and take his possessions. The only thing that prevented me from taking them myself was that he is a man.' Hassaan رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ said, 'I have no need for his possessions, O daughter of Abdul Muttalib.'" (1)

## Hadhrat Ummu Sulaym رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهَا Takes up a Dagger to Fight in the Battle of Hunayn

Hadhrat Anas رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ narration during the Battle of Hunayn, Hadhrat Abu Talha رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ came laughing to Rasulullaah ﷺ. He said, "O Rasulullaah ﷺ! Have you seen (my wife) Ummu Sulaym with a dagger in her hand?" Rasulullaah ﷺ asked, "O Ummu Sulaym! What do you intend doing with that?" She replied, "My intention is to use it to stab any Mushrik who comes close to me." (2)

Hadhrat Anas رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ reports that during the Battle of Hunayn, Hadhrat Ummu Sulaym رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهَا took a dagger and kept it with her. When Hadhrat Abu Talha رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ saw her with it, he said to Rasulullaah ﷺ, "Look at Ummu Sulaym with a dagger!" "What is this dagger for?" Rasulullaah ﷺ asked her. She replied, "I am keeping it to tear the belly of any Mushrik who approaches me." This made Rasulullaah ﷺ smile. (3)

## Hadhrat Asmaa bint Yazeed رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهَا Kills Nine of the Enemy During the Battle of Yarmook

Hadhrat Muhaajir narrates that Hadhrat Asmaa bint Yazeed bin Sakan رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهَا was the cousin of Hadhrat Mu'aadh bin Jabal رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ. Using a tent peg, she killed nine Romans during the Battle of Yarmook. (4)

## Refusing Permission for Women to Proceed in the path of Allaah

### Rasulullaah ﷺ Refuses Permission for Hadhrat Ummu Kabsha رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهَا to Proceed in Jihaad

Hadhrat Ummu Kabsha رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهَا belonged to the Banu Qudhaa'a clan of the Udhra tribe. When she once requested permission from Rasulullaah ﷺ to participate in a particular expedition, Rasulullaah ﷺ refused. She said, "O Rasulullaah ﷺ! I do not wish to fight. All I intend doing is to nurse the wounded and sick

(1) Ibn Is'haaq, as quoted in *Al Bidaaya wan Nihaaya* (Vol.4 Pg.108). Bayhaqi (Vol.6 Pg.308) has also reported the narration from various sources. One of his narrations state that Hadhrat Safiyya رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهَا was the first women to kill a Mushrik. Refer also to *Isaaba* (Vol.4 Pg.349), *Kanzul Ummaal* (Vol.7 Pg.99) and *Majma'uz Zawaa'id* (Vol.6 Pg.133) for further references.

(2) Ibn Abi Shayba, as quoted in *Kanzul Ummaal* (Vol.5 Pg.307). Ibn Sa'd has also reported the narration, as quoted in *Isaaba* (Vol.4 Pg.461).

(3) Muslim.

(4) Tabraani, narrating from reliable sources as confirmed by Haythami (Vol.9 Pg.260).

and to give water to the ill." Rasulullaah ﷺ replied, "Had I not feared that this would become a regular practice and that people would say, 'But she went out (why can't I)', I would have granted you permission. You should rather stay at home." (1)

## The Reward for Obedience to One's Husband and Fulfilling His Rights Equals that of Jihaad

Hadhrat Abdullaah bin Abbaas ؓ narrates that a woman once came to Rasulullaah ﷺ and said, "O Rasulullaah ﷺ! I have been sent to represent all the women before you. Allaah has made Jihaad compulsory on the men. They are rewarded when they suffer any injuries and if they are martyred, they remain alive by their Rabb and are sustained. On the other hand, all we women do is to serve the men. What rewards will we then receive?" Rasulullaah ﷺ replied, "Make it clear to every woman you meet that the reward for obedience to the husband and for fulfilling his rights equals this (reward for Jihaad). However, there are few of you who do this." (2)

Towards the end of a narration in Tabraani, it is reported that a woman came to Rasulullaah ﷺ and asked, "I have been sent to you as an envoy from the other women. Every woman who knows about my coming here and every woman who does not know about it have wished me to come. Allaah is the Rabb of men and women alike and he is also the Rabb of women. Similarly, you are Allaah's Rasool ﷺ to men and women. Allaah has made Jihaad compulsory on the men. They receive the booty when they do well (and are victorious) and if they are martyred, they remain alive by their Rabb and are sustained. Which good deed (of a woman) can equal these deeds of men?" Rasulullaah ﷺ replied, "Obedience to their husbands and recognising the rights they owe. However, there are few of you who actually do this." (3)

## Children March and Fight in Jihaad

### A Child Fights and is Injured in the Battle of Uhud

Hadhrat Sha'bi narrates that when the Battle of Uhud was to take place, a woman gave her son a sword. Because he was unable to carry it, she tied it securely to his arm using leather straps. She then took him to Rasulullaah ﷺ saying, "O Rasulullaah ﷺ! This son of mine shall fight for you." (As the battle progressed) Rasulullaah ﷺ said to the boy, "Dear son! Attack here" and "Dear son! Attack there". The boy was later wounded and fell to the ground. When he was brought to Rasulullaah ﷺ, Rasulullaah ﷺ said, "Dear son! You must be terrified?" "No, O Rasulullaah ﷺ," he replied, "Not at all." (4)

(1) Tabraani, narrating from reliable sources as confirmed by Haythami (Vol.5 Pg.323).

(2) Bazaar.

(3) Tabraani, as quoted in *Targheeb wat Tarheeb* (Vol.3 Pg.336).

(4) Ibn Abi Shayba, as quoted in *Kanzul Ummaal* (Vol.5 Pg.277).

## Hadhrat Umayr bin Abi Waqqaas رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ Weeps and is Granted Permission

Hadhrat Sa'd bin Abi Waqqaas رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ narrates that Rasulullaah ﷺ sent Hadhrat Umayr bin Abi Waqqaas رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ back as they were proceeding to Badr because Rasulullaah ﷺ thought that he was too young. However, when Hadhrat Umayr رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ started weeping (out of disappointment), Rasulullaah ﷺ granted him permission. Hadhrat Sa'd bin Abi Waqqaas رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ says, "I then tied a knot on the belt that held his sword (because it was too large for him). I also participated in the Battle of Badr at a time when there was only a single hair on my face that I could hold in my fingers (because my beard had just started growing)." (1)

## Hadhrat Umayr bin Abi Waqqaas رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ is Martyred

Hadhrat Sa'd bin Abi Waqqaas رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ says, "Before we presented ourselves to Rasulullaah ﷺ for the Battle of Badr, I noticed my brother Umayr bin Abi Waqqaas رَضِيَ اللهُ عَنْهُ hiding from Rasulullaah ﷺ. 'What is the matter, dear brother?' I asked. 'I fear that Rasulullaah ﷺ would see me and send me back (to Madinah) thinking that I am too young whereas I would love to march so that Allaah should bless me with martyrdom.' When he was presented to Rasulullaah ﷺ, Rasulullaah ﷺ asked him to return. However, when he started weeping, Rasulullaah ﷺ permitted him. I then tied knots to the belt that held his sword because of his small size. He was later martyred at the tender age of sixteen." (2)



(1) Ibn Asaakir, as quoted in *Kanzul Ummaal* (Vol.5 Pg.270). Haakim (Vol.3 Pg.88) and Baghawi have also reported the narration.

(2) Ibn Sa'd, as quoted in *Isaaba* (Vol.3 Pg.135). Bazaar has also reported the narration from reliable sources as confirmed by Haythami (Vol.6 Pg.69).